THE ROMANE CONCLAVE.

Wherein, by way of HISTORY, exemplified vpon the Liues of the Romane Emperours, from CHARLES the Great, to RODVLPH now *Reigning*;

The forcible Entries, and Vsurpations of the Iesuited Statists, successiuely practised against *the sacred Maiestie of the said* EMPIRE:

And so by Application, against the Residue of the CHRISTIAN KINGS, and FREE-STATES are liuely Acted, and truely Reported.

By IO. VRSINVS *Ante-Iesuite.*

Io. de Turre-cremat. de Illicitis dispensat.

Ecclesia iuribus & legibus regitur, siue debet regi; Non talibus actibus, siue exemplis.

D. AND. Fol. 46.

Dum enim Henrici, Frederici, Lodouici *pugnant:* Sultani, Chami, Ottomani, *miseriâ nostrâ magni sunt, ditiones suas perditione nostra dilatârunt.*

LONDON

Printed for *Iohn Iagger*, and are to be sold at his Shop in Fleete-streete within Temple Barre. 1609.

¶ The Names of the Authours out of *whose Records, these memorials are Collected.*

Auentine.
Bartolus.
Barnus de vitis Pontif.
Benno.
Blondus.
Catal. testium verit.
Collenutius.
Cuspinian.
The Decretals.
Aeneas Siluius.
Feronius.
Functius.
Gunther.
Guicciardine.
Hub. Goltz.
Helmoldius.
Hutenus.
Ioan. de Cremona.
Iouius.
Krantzius.
Gerard Moringus.
Munster.
Mutius.
Nauclerus.
Otho Frisingensis.
Pandulfus.
Paral. Vrsperg.
Petrus de Vineis.
Platina.
Radauicus.
Sleydan.
Ia. Spigelij Annot.
Theodore de Nyem.
Tritemnius.
Ab. Vrspergensis.
Wimphelinagus Ger.
Zeigl. de vir. illust. German.

¶ To the vnresolued Reader, Peace and Profit.

IN Disputations *words multiply words: In tedious Discourses (for the most part) groũded vpon the sole Authority of running reason, small satisfaction is afforded to weake consciences. In this Argument, I must confesse, matters of weightie consequence are debated;* The Romish Prelates *are accused of* Intrusion *and* Vsurpation: *And they againe, as stiffely maintaine* faire *and* filiall vsage, *with* successiue diuolution. *To what purpose were it then, for any man how learned, or zealous soeuer, to inforce his vtmost indeuours, to put end to a Controuersied question; If when all hath beene said, that* Truth *and* Learning *can alleadge: Euery passionate and discontented Humorist may take vpon him with colours and cunning distinctions, to oppose and contradict his opposites Assertions. In this case, what conscience can but remaine distracted in* vtramque partem? *The Disputants on either side, are men of admirable reputation for their learning. Both of them bring warrant (or at least) seeme to bring warrant to maintaine their partie. Yet oftentimes vpon priuate passion, so impertinently and maliciously, that either they seeme not to haue read the Authours whome they quote; Or hauing read them, they doe not vnderstand them, or vnderstanding them, they doe of purpose misconster them. Vpon which conceite it should seeme, that this our* Ante-Iesuite, *in as-*

ſured hope to worke more by Example, *then* Diſcourſe, *hath purpoſely declined theſe ambiguous Diſputations; And in liew therof hath brought vpon the ſtage of* Iudgement, Time *and* Teſtimonie, Veritatis parentes, *to pleade nothing for themſelues, but* matter on Record. *A courſe that hath ſeldome in ſo doubtfull a Controuerſie beene preſented to Audience. The* Remembrancers *were men* without Exception, *and ſome of them by teſtimonies on either ſide,* Genere, pietate, & eruditione Nobiliſſimi, atq; harum rerum Teſtes pene oculati: *Their names and credits you are acquainted with; your vnderſtandings will informe you of their Maners, and the Times, wherein, and vnder whome they flouriſhed. Nothing then remaineth, but a rectified conſcience, to make true vſe of the Application. Which to effect, behold our* Ante-jeſuite, *hath not onely runne the trueſt and plaineſt Path-way to confidence, but alſo in old and auncient faſhion, hath of purpoſe thus attired his Actors, that the buſieſt-headed Ieſuite that euer put pen to Paper, may rather with impudencie cauill at* Antiquitie, *then with his fierie wit, become a ſtumbling-blocke to the wauering, by* Excepting *to his Pen or Perſon. You your ſelues ſit Iudges; and as vnpreiudicated Arbitrators examine the Pleas: Both parties are at the Barre, and ſhall produce their beſt Titles, euen Titles of preſcription. Whereunto, how-euer* Paul *plant, or* Apollo *water, Let that great God who ſearcheth the reines, and loueth nothing but Trueth, giue a plentifull increaſe to the reſtauration of his reformed kingdome,* Amen.

Thine in Aſſurance,

C. H.

A TRVE RELATION BY WAY OF HISTORIE, DISCOVRSING VPON THE TRECHERIES, INSOLENCIES, AND Tyrannies, which the Romane Popes from time to *time haue practiſed, vpon, and againſt the ſacred* Maieſtie of the GERMAINE Empire: And ſo by inſinuation, vpon all Chriſtian Kings, Princes, and free *Common-weales.*

AMongſt the manifolde and infinite choyce of *Precedents*, arguing and prouing, *God himſelfe*, to bee both the *Parent* and *Protector* of *Order:* Herein eſpecially appeareth the moſt euident and remarkeable *Confirmation* thereof; *In that* all thoſe godly and goodly Conformities (whereby from euerlaſting, *Religion*, and the vnfained zeale thereof, together with the mutuall references of *Humane life*, and *Ciuill ſocietie*, haue beene by due and orderly proceedings maintained and perfected)

fected) haue tended euen from the prime-birth of Mankind, by admirable prouidence, to aduance the *Prieſthood* to gouerne the Church, and the *Temporall Magiſtrate* to take care of the Commonwealth; and *Both* diſtinguiſhed by their peculiar *Orders* and *Dignities*, without intermedling one in anothers *Office*.

For albeit the fathers of the Old Teſtament, *Abel*, *Seth*, *Noah*, *Abraham*, and *Iacob*, who liued before the promulgation of the written Law, are regiſtred to be ſole Gouernours aſwell of *Religion* as of *Lay-matters*: and that in ſucceeding ages, both amongſt the *Egyptians*, and many other Nations (the preſidents no doubt being taken from the examples of the foreſaid Patriarkes) none by the authoritie of *Plato* were choſen to be Kings, but ſuch as formerly had beene intereſſed in the adminiſtration of their Religious ceremonies: yet by the written Law of *Moſes*, God manifeſted his determinate pleaſure in diſtinguiſhment of eithers *Authoritie*: The *Prieſts* to Teach, to Sacrifice, to Pray: The *Princes* with the people, to ſit in iudgement, to obſerue Diſcipline, to procure Peace, and that according to *Order* and *Equitie*.

In the new Prieſthood, in the New Teſtament (being the very inſtitution of Chriſt the Sonne of God, and the Sauiour of the world,) *Himſelfe*, being ordained by the will of his *Father*, a *Prince*, and a *Prieſt* for euer, vtterly refuſing to intermeddle in Temporall gouernement, tooke vpon him the charge of Spirituall matters *onely*: For that, his Kingdome was from eternitie and celeſtiall, not tranſitorie and politicall. For he knew, That in his Kingdome, worldly matters, temporarie, vaine, and paſſeable, were not to be managed;

but

but bleſſings heauenly and euerlaſting to be diſtributed. Whereupon he gaue *Pilate*, demaunding him as concerning his Temporalitie, this ſweete anſwere, That, *His kingdome was not of this world: Neither that he came to be miniſtred vnto, but to miniſter; Yea, to lay doxn his life for the ſaluation of many.* And when the multitude would haue created him a King, hee auoyded it. The iudgement, or portion of an offered inheritance, he refuſed: And not onely commanded to giue vnto *Cæſar*, that which was *Cæſars*; but where the tribute money was demanded (leſt he ſhould giue an euill preſident to others) the Siluer being taken out from the Fiſhes mouth, he deliuered it vnto the Kings Officers.

John 18. *Matth.* 20 *John* 6. *Luke* 12. *Marke* 12. *Matth.* 17.

Moreouer, when he vnderſtood that his Diſciples diſtracted through the ambition of ſuperioritie, contended for *Primacie*, hee told them; That not *they*, but *Temporall Princes* were to affect Soueraigntie; hereby putting them in minde of their *Calling*, as diſ-vnited from worldly Gouernement, and humane Policies.

At laſt, after his glorious reſurrection, he ſent them to Preach the Goſpel ouer the whole world, but with no other Commiſſion, then what he himſelfe had receiued from his Father. Intimating by this *Mandat*, that they were neuer called, nor choſen for Lordſhip, but that through the Preaching of the Goſpel, and the glad tidings of ſaluation, they were bound to beget a Congregation to the Father in eternitie: That, *Him* they ſhould loue, feare and inuocate with all their power: And being aſtoniſhed with no torments, calumnies nor threates, they ſhould not forbeare to confeſſe his holy Name before all men. *That*, in Prayer, they ſhould carie themſelues zealouſly, faithfully, conſtantly

ſtantly, modeſtly, ſoberly, and chaſtly: That, vpon cauſe of offences, they ſhould ſtudie mildneſſe; compaſſion towards good men oppreſſed, and patience amidſt their miſeries: That, by the bond of peace, they ſhould retaine vnitie of ſpirit; And finally, that caſting away the care of earthly eaſements, they ſhould meekly indure pouertie, and worldly diſpleaſures, that thus by their doctrine, and example of life, Chriſt might be glorified, the Church increaſed, and their Miniſterie admired.

And ſurely the Apoſtles, and their ſucceſſors, in all their trauailes ouer the face of the earth, thus vndertaken by the commandement of their Maſter, ſo behaued themſelues in all occurrances, but eſpecially in this obſeruancie of difference betweene politicall Gouernement and Eccleſiaſticall orders, that by this note onely they were acknowledged to bee the true Diſciples and followers of their glorified Maſter. For they not onely Preached with puritie the euerlaſting will of God (without intermingling of humane fancies) but alſo, in all places accuſtomed to teach; That vpon earth *Cæſars* (Kings) were to bee acknowledged next vnto God, and to be reuerenced before all other mortall men; They ſtiled them *their Lords*, payed them tribute, made interceſſion vnto God for their welfare; And vnto ſuch as ſpake euill of the Magiſtrate, they threatned reuenge from aboue. From all worldly affaires, eſpecially from the abuſe of Armes, they abhorred; Knowing that the twofold ſword of the Church was intruſted to ſaluation and regeneration, and not for diſtruction. So farre were they euen from imagination, to thinke it lawfull to diſenthronize any King

or

or Potentate, though a moſt wicked one; either to *abſolue* his people from their Othes of *Allegiance*, or to proue maſteries with him about *Precedencies*. But rather they thought it a worke worthy their calling, by the ſpace of two hundred and ſeuentie yeeres, to ſuffer moſt bitter and terrible perſecutions, and thoſe too rather to bee indured by ſtedfaſt faith in Chriſt Ieſus, by zealous calling vpon his Name, and by glorious Martyrdome; then by rebellious impatiencie, and violent Meditation of requitall; And all this, not without admirable increaſe, and good ſucceſſe to the Church of Chriſt.

Sanguis martyrum ſemen Eccleſiæ.

For in what Age was the face of the Church more amiable, or liker the head thereof, euen Chriſt Ieſus, then when after his aſcenſion, his Diſciples (ſtriuing to fulfill his Teſtament; and their ſucceſſors, treading in the very ſame footeſteps) Preached faithfully and purely the Goſpel through *Iudea*, *Samaria*, and *Paleſtine*? After that, when ſo glorious and conſpicuous, as when with their fellow labourers, taking their Iournyes towards other Nations, but eſpecially towards *Rome* (at that time the chiefe Seate of the Empire) and the bordering Regions, they imployed their times in dreſſing, in Planting and in watering the Lords vineyard, *viz.* From the time of *Linus* to *Siluester*, and *Cæſar Conſtantine* by the ſpace of two hundred and fiftie yeeres, vnder moſt vnſufferable Perſecutions, euen to the loſſe of their liues and deareſt bloods?

But aſſoone as *Conſtantine* by the diuine prouidence had giuen peace to the afflicted Churches, and that the Biſhops being deliuered from their lurking corners, from Vaults and from dennes, wherein during

the time of Perſecution they had ſafe conducted their bodies, then, I ſay, ſhamed they not to giue themſelues ouer to the delights of the world, to vnprofitable idleneſſe: to liue a pleaſurable life; to degenerate from the wayes of their predeceſſors, through neglect of Gods word, being wholly ſeduced with carnall affections. Then began they to giue coulorable clothing to the doctrine of Chriſt and his Apoſtles, by *Canons*, *Decretals*, and *Ceremonies:* Then began they to deuiſe new appellations of *Dignitie*: To *preferre* one Church before all other, and finally bluſhed not to confound all orders both Ciuill and Eccleſiaſticall. Whereupon preſently followed ſo vniuerſall a confuſion of Doctrine, Diſcipline and Order, that they no longer ſeemed to repreſent the late Paſtours of the Lords flocke, but raueuing Wolues; not Prieſts but blaſphemers; not Doctors but deiectors of ſoules from the ſweete aſpect of the face of God.

For ſurely, they did not onely obſcure in a wonderous maner the ſinceritie of the Chriſtian doctrine by their humane traditions; gaue it ſo great a ſcandall by ſuperſtitious impietie, and heatheniſh inuocation of Soules departed; and ſo wickedly polluted it with blaſphemous Idolatrie; But all honeſtie and diſcipline being troden vnderfoote, in all ſeducement and oppreſſion of veritie, they ſpent their whole dayes in Sodomiticall abuſes, in Wantonneſſe, in Luxurie, in Ribaldrie, in Whoring, in Sacrilege, in Contention, in Necromancie, in Charmes, in Homicide, and ſuch like tranſgreſſions: And that more is, being poſſeſſed with a diabolical affectation of Gouernment & pride, cleane contrarie to the Diuine commandement, they began

to

to buſie themſelues in ſecular affaires; to withdrawe their faiths from the ſubiection of Kings, to vſurpe vpon other mens patrimonies; to thruſt in their crooked Syckles (and that at aduenture) into another mans Harueſt; to arrogate both Preſences; to challenge the iuriſdiction of both Swords; to tollerate no equall, much leſſe no Superiour; to defraude one of his right, an other of his Honour; to giue Law to Kings, and preſcribe them ordinances; baſely to eſteeme of Emperours, as if they reigned at will; to accurſe them and murder them; To ſet Princes together by the eares; to ſow diſſentions; to patronize factions; to abſolue Subiects from their Othes of Allegiance; and finally by their nouell and ſlie Policies, to mooue them to vnlawfull Rebellions: So farre forth, that after they had once pleaded preſcription in their incrochments, they more defaced the Maieſtie of the Romane Empire, by their diſsimulations, ſlaughters, warre, and ſuch varieties of wickedneſſes, then any forraine or barbarous enemy could haue done by the Sword or violence.

For to let paſſe the Empire of the Eaſt, ruinated by the cunning and ſlie cariage of the *Romane Biſhops*, the *Grecians* being firſt expulſed *Italy* by the *Lombards*, and preſently (they againe being oppreſſed by the French) called in againſt *Aſtulphus* King of the *Lombards*, for calling vpon *Steuen* the ſecond for his Subſidy money: Euery man that is any thing ſeene in Hiſtorie, knoweth (the Romane Empire being by the prowes of *Charles* the Great, transferred from the *Grecians* to the *Germanes*) how the Emperours of *Germanie* haue beene harried by the incredible ſubtilties and combinations

nations

nations of the *Romane Biſhops*; wearied with moſt lamentable warres, and laſtly the goodly and moſt flouriſhing forces of the Empire by their vngodlineſſe diſvnited, impoueriſhed, and waſted.

Surely the remembrance of theſe times are ſo diſtaſtfull and lamentable, that I had rather waſh them out with teares, then aggrauate them by ſpeech: But ſithence our Pen is fallen into repetition thereof, I perſwade my ſelfe, that it ſhall proue neither a digreſſion from my proiect, neither impertinent from the point of our Argument, to Paint out in moſt liuely colours, what hath beene the humilitie, obſeruancie, loyaltie & obedience of the *Roman Biſhops* manifeſted throughout all Ages, ſithence the dayes of the aforeſaid *Charles* towards the moſt worthy *Germane* Emperors, their very good Lords and eſpeciall benefactors.

Charles the Great.

TO begin therefore with the *Frenchmen*, who firſt transferred the Empire from the *Grecians* to the *Germanes*: who liueth ſo ignorant, that knoweth not, with what immunities and honourable indowments they adorned the Romane Clergie? Firſt, *Charles* ſurnamed the *Great*, to his eternall renowne deliuered that Sea, being moſt grieuouſly laide vnto by *Deſiderius* King of the *Lombards*, to the vtter confuſion of his Armie. Againſt *Heriſigus* Duke of *Benouent*, he likewiſe defended his frontiers: And preſently after

after that, hee reſtored *Leo* the third to his Sea, at *Baryona*, being expulſed from *Rome* by the faction of his aduerſaries.

Lewes ſurnamed Pius.

This man was Emperour in the yeere of Chriſt eight hundred and fourteene, at what time Egbright *gouerned the Weſt Saxons, and firſt called our Countrey* Anglia.

LEWES ſucceeding his father *Charles* (as the Romane Chronicles record) with no leſſe liberalitie, granted vnto the *Romane Biſhops* and his ſucceſſours, the Citie of *Rome* together with his Dukedome: and defended the iuriſdiction and dignitie thereof, euen to the imputation of ſuperſtition.

Notwithſtanding; neither the remembrance of the good ſeruices of the father, nor the vertues of the ſonne, could ſo farre foorth wey with *Gregorie* the third, as to ſuppreſſe, much leſſe to mitigate his diueliſh intendments once conceiued againſt this *Lewes*. For the Warre being on foote betweene *Lewes* and his ſonnes; He (as it behoued an Apoſtolicall Biſhop) ſought not to quench the fire of this vnkindneſſe betweene father and child, but being ſent by *Lewes* into the Campe of his ſonnes to capitulate the Peace, with condition to returne againe vnto the Emperour; renolting from *Lewes*, he remained with his ſonnes, and like a true Apoſtata, abetted and complotted this vn-

naturall diſſenſion; ſo farre foorth, that the father was taken, and being committed to moſt ſeuere impriſonment, with his yonger ſonne was finally thruſt into the Monaſterie of *Sueſſons*. Behold here a moſt ſtrange precedent of ingratitude in children againſt their deareſt Parents, and the deteſtable impietie of a Biſhop againſt a moſt innocent Emperour; both equally gilty of like periurie and diſloyaltie.

From that time, although the Royal Diademe continued for ſome certaine Ages in the poſteritie of *Lewes*, neuertheleſſe their helliſh humors did no more ſpare the iſſue, then in former time it compaſſionated the Parent. And no maruaile, for this was the onely marke that they ſhotte at, that hauing once ſhaken off the right which the Emperour pretended in the confirmation of Biſhops, they might with more ſecuritie euer after haue meanes to ouertop them in greatneſſe. Which their moſt prouident proiect was long a hatching, neither could it bee deliuered to diſcouerie, before the yeere eight hundred ninetie fiue. At what time *Charles* the Groſſe departing out of *Italy* to warre vpon the *Normans*, who at that time miſerably infeſted the Sea-coaſts of *France*; *Hadrian* the third layed hold vpon this opportunitie, and in the very beginning of his Pontificie, made his complaint vnto the Senate and people of *Rome*; *That in the Election of Biſhops, the Imperiall authoritie was not to be ſtood vpon, but that the Suffrages of the Clergie and the people ought alwayes to be free.*

By this Decree he diſſeyſed the Emperours of their whole right, which but lately they poſſeſſed both vp-

on

on the Biſhops and the Citie; Thereby pointing out to his ſucceſſors a courſe how to attempt proiects of higher nature in future ages.

And ſurely from thoſe times, what vpon the deficiencie of the iſſue of *Charles* the Great, which had moſt fortunately Gouerned the Empire for the ſpace of one hundred and odde yeeres: and what in regard of that moſt horrible Schiſme proceeding from that Chaire of peſtilence, managed betweene the Biſhops themſelues by mutuall Murders, Poyſenings, and all other kind of enormities, their continued machinations againſt the Emperours ſome-deale ceaſed; vntill they reaſſumed a new occaſion of plotting & reiterating their former courſes againſt *Otho* the firſt, Emperour of *Germanie*.

Otho the Great.

He was choſen Emperour in the yeere nine hundred thirtie and ſixe. In England reigned Adelſtan.

FOr at what time, in the Reigne of *Otho*, *Iohn* the thirteenth, Noble in trueth by Birth, but moſt baſe in conuerſation, Gouerned the Romiſh Sea, and polluted *Peters* Chaire with ryot, gaming, pandariſme and Women, &c. At that very ſame inſtant likewiſe *Berengarius* Duke of *Lombardie*, amongſt many other Cities, forbore not to preſſe hard vpon the Citie of *Rome* alſo. The Cardinals grew diſcontented, aſwell at the *Popes* Epicu-

riſme, as at *Berengarius* his Tyrannie. Two of them more agrieued then the reſt (whether vpon ſcruple of conſcience, or in remembrance of the greatneſſe of the Romane name, or in hatred of the *Pope*) reſolued to pray in aide of *Otho*, a Prince of that time much celebrated for his vertues amongſt the *Loraners*, the *French*, the *Hungariſh*, the *Danes*, and all the other barbarous people, vnder his obedience throughout that part of the world.

Whereupon, calling ſome others to Councell, by letters and meſſages they ſolicite *Otho*, that he would vouchſafe to aſſiſt the declining eſtate of the Church and Common-wealth: That hee would repreſſe the Tyrannie of *Berengarius* cruelly raging vpon the Chriſtian people: And that he would not let, to deliuer the Church from ſo fell and impure a beaſt. The *Biſhop* comming to the knowledge of theſe paſſages, firſt cut off three of his fingers, that indited the Letters, and then ſlit his Chancellors noſe, for giuing approbation thereunto. But *Otho*, who thought it not fitte to leaue the Church ſuccourleſſe in times of danger, hauing amaſſed all neceſſaries for warfare, marcheth into *Italy* with fiftie thouſand Souldiers. Expelleth both *Berengarius* and his ſonne *Adelbert*: then ſpeedeth towards *Rome*. Where arriued, although the inhumane cruelties of the Biſhoppe were not vnknowne to his Maieſtie: Yet in reuerence of the Apoſtolicke Sea, at firſt hee decreed no hard or vnbeſeeming cenſure againſt him, but cauſing all things that had beene iniuriouſly taken from him to bee reſtored, hee preſented him moreouer with great maſſes of Gold, Siluer and Iewels. And appointing him a time

of

of conference; ſecretly and friendly hee repeated what he knew of his fore paſſed offences, wiſhing him thereafter to abſtaine from ſo groſſe and foule enormities; To leade a thriftie life; to bee an ornament, and not a diſhonour to the Church; That integritie of life was no leſſe commendable in a Churchman, then Artes and learning.

For the preſent, the *Pope* proteſteth great hopes of amendment: The Emperour reioyceth thereat, and leauing *Rome* iournieth towards *Papia*, there minding to Winter, but withall exacteth a ſolemne Oath from the Biſhoppe taken vpon the body of Saint PETER; THAT IN HIS ABSENCE HE SHOVLD NO WAY BE ASSISTING TO *BERENGARIVS*, NOR HIS SONNE. The Emperour had ſcarce left the Gates of *Rome*, but the Biſhop returning to his wonted inclination, not onely followeth his pleaſures, his Whoredomes, his Ryottes, his poyſenings, and all other miſchiefes, of like nature; but alſo hauing forgotten his plighted faith to the Emperour, reuoketh *Adelbert* from *Fraxineto*, whether hee had fled out of *Italy* to the *Saracens*, and promiſeth him his vtmoſt aſsiſtance againſt the Emperour: Hee diſpatcheth alſo his Legats to make like complaint againſt him at *Conſtantinople*.

The Emperour, vnto whome ſuch groſſe and wilfull periurie ſeemed more then wonderfull, vpon the firſt intelligence thereof, thought it not fitte raſhly to liſten thereunto, but diſpatcheth certaine of his Seruaunts to *Rome* to learne the certaintie of the buſineſſe.

Vpon their returne,and iuſtification of theſe, and more vile indignities, the Emperor (not vniuſtly moued to diſpleaſure) ſuddenly haſteth towards *Rome* : wh ere pitching his tents hard vnder the walles (*Iohn* and *Adelbert* being fled into *Campania*)he is moſt honorably receiued into the City by the Inhabitants. Vnto him they promiſe faith and loyalty, and ſweare thereafter neuer to elect a Pope without the conſent of the *Emperor Otho*, *Cæſar*, *Auguſtus*, and his Sonne *Otho*.

Iohn being thus eſcaped; and for feare of *Cæſar* lurking in *Campania* in woods and corners ; after three daies,at the inſtance both of the Clergie and the people(deſiring a Commiſſion to enquire vpon the life and conuerſation of *Iohn*) the Emperor agreeth, and proclaimeth a Councell; whereunto he calleth all the Biſhops and Abbots of *Italie*,ſuch as he knew to bee men of integrity,honeſt,and zealous.

Who appearing vpon the day preſcribed,although his abominable life was ſuch, that euen by the generall opinion of the Councell,it could not but be deciphered by the remoteſt Nations,yet this moſt vertuous Emperor, tooke order that they ſhould not proceed to any raſh Iudgement, but to determine all accuſations with mildneſſe of mind and deliberate advice.

Whereupon with the Archbiſhops of *Liguria*, *Tuſcanie*,*Saxonie* and *France*,he diſpatcheth his letters vnto *Iohn*,reciting therein the cauſe and maner of his accuſation: not forbearing to intreat him to make his perſonall appearance,to ſay for himſelfe againſt his accuſers.

But he returning for anſwer ; *that it ſhould eaſilie appeare*

peare, what ſlight eſteeme he made of that Councell; And that, he would ſuddenly proceed to *Excommunication*, in caſe they preſumed to elect *Any* other: the Emperor in a moſt ſolemne Oration intimateth to the Councell, his periuries towards himſelfe, and his diſhoneſt conuerſation towards the whole Chriſtian world.

Vpon hearing wherof, with one conſent the *Councell* declared this Apoſtata *Iohn* for *his euill life to be worthilie depriued*: And *Leo* chiefe Secretary of the Romane Church was choſen to ſucceed him.

In the *interim* wherof, the *Emperor* not to be burdenſome vnto the State of *Rome*, had diſmiſſed many of thoſe companies of Souldiers which at firſt hee had brought with him into *Italie*. *Which* comming vnto the vnderſtanding of this reprobate Biſhop, who full well was acquainted with the diſloyall and mutable humours of the Italian Nation, ſendeth his eſpialls to *Rome*, with exhortations to the people to attempt a ſurprize vpon the Emperor and his weake companies; for which their good ſeruice he promiſeth to reward them with all the *Treaſures* of the *Church* and *Saint Peter*.

The Romans being hereunto incouraged, partly by the weakneſſe of *Cæſars* army, and partly with the conceit of theſe *Golden mountaines*, ariſe, and at the ſound of a Trumpet charge vpon the Emperor.

He maketh a ſtand vpon the *Bridge* of *Tiber*, and there with his feareleſſe and old Trained companies, valiantly receiueth the charge: The Romanes receiue the iuſt reward of their trechery: for being routed, and put to flight, neither ſanctuary, nor vnſanctuary could

warrant

warrant any one mans life ; the fury of the Souldiers ſlew the periurd,aſwell at the Altar, as in the Shambles.

When this was done, *Cæſar* ſtood in good hope, that after ſo great a puniſhment,the Romanes would proue afterwards to be of more quiet and aduiſed diſpoſitions,and in this conceit,he haſtneth to *Spoletum*, the place of *Adelberts rendeuou.*

Vpon which abſence *Iohn* betaking him to his wits, through the mediation of certaine *good-wenches*,heretofore of his ancient acquaintance, ſo worketh with many of the Roman gentry,that *Iohn* is receiued into the City; and *Leo* with much labour eſcaping their hands, flieth vnto the Emperor.

The depoſement of *Leo*, and the cruelty of *Iohn*, which he had already inflicted vpon ſome few, being known; *Cæſar* repaireth his Army, with intention to be revenged vpon the Romans, as well for the iniury offered to his own perſon,as for the wrong in depoſing a Biſhop of his owne inſtitution.

In midſt of which intendment,by the iudgement of Almighty God,meaning to make this *Iohn* an exemplary preſident to the world of his moſt iuſt indignation,it came to paſſe ,that he died a moſt ſtrange kind of death.

For when vpon a certain night without the walles of the City, hee was ſporting himſelfe with an other mans wife , the diuell gaue him ſuch a knocke on the Temples, ſaith *Luitprandus* of *Ticine*,that within eight daies he died of the wound.

Plati.in the life of Iohn xiij.

Other write,that he was wounded by the womans husband; and ſo gaue vp his impure ſoule to the diuell his

his maſter, whom he had long ſerued.

But death gaue no ſurceaſe to the ſeditions firſt occaſioned by this monſter. For the Romans, in place of the deceaſed, ſet vp *Benedict* the fift, and afterwards required *Confirmation* from the Emperor, then reſiding at *Spoletum*.

The Emperor diſallowing the Election, diſdainfully diſmiſſed the Romans, little miſtruſting any ſuch welcome: and by fire and ſword waſting all things about the City, finally compelled them, that expulſing (or rather yeelding vp) *Benedict*, they ſhould accept of *Leo:* binding them by Oth , that they ſhould not preſume to alter any thing, which he had ſet down for the Churches gouernment.

Hereupon *Leo* being reſtored to his Sea at *Barionea*, and over wearied with the diſloyall humours of the Roman people, retranſferred the whole Authority of choſing the Roman Biſhops from the Clergy and people of *Rome*, vnto the Emperor ; as it is ſet downe. *diſtinct. 6. c. in Synodo.*

Platina in the life of Benedict the fift. See alſo Krantzius lib. 4. cap. 9.

And *Otho*, having in this maner marſhalled his affaires, returned into *Germanie*, taking *Benedict* with him; who not long after through griefe of mind, being committed to the ſafe cuſtody of *Adaldag*, *Othoes* Chancellor, and Archbiſhop of *Hanburg*, died at *Hamburg*, and there lieth buried in the Cathedrall Church.

Otho the third.

He raigned in the yeere of Christ 984. about the dayes of Etheldred.

Naucler. genera. 34 Plat. in vita Gregorij V. Cuspinian & Theod. de Nyem in the life of Otho the third.

SOme few yeeres after, as *Otho* succeeded his Grandfather in the Empire: so did hee likewise in the contentions of the Bishops. For when as *Iohn* the xvij. being dead, by the right of Election, inuested vpon him by the donation of *Leo* the viij, to his predecessor *Otho* the great, hee had chosen *Gregorie* the v. for Pope; *Crescentius* and the people stomacking that a man of the German nation should be aduanced to be their Bishop, and him also chosen by the sole authority of the Emperor, they resolued to depose him; and in his place they substituted, *Iohn* the xviij. of that name, first Bishop of *Placentia*, a man well stored with coyn, and a great Scholler.

Gregorie maketh his repaire into *Germanie* to the Emperor, and there vnfolding his hard vsage, so prouoked the Emperor, that he besiegeth the City, and pressed it so closely, that the people almost hunger starued opened their Gates, and receiued his Maiesty.

Being now in possession, and vnderstanding, that like power by warrant of Gods word, was bequeathed him ouer a wicked Bishop, as ouer a common theefe; at first he gaue commandement that the eies of the captiue Bishop should be put out, the fingers of both his hands to be cut off, and then clothed in vile attire, with his stumps and feet manacled, to be set vpon an Asse, so to be conueyed through the City, and finally

to

to be thrown headlong from the rocke *Tarpeia*.

Creſcentius the Conſul hee alſo cauſed to be mounted vpon a baſe Beaſt, his face towards his taile, his noſe and eares to be cut off, ſo to be a common ſpectacle to all beholders, and laſtly to be hanged vpon the common Gallowes in ſight of the City walles.

Thus hauing wrecked his iuſt indignation vpon his aduerſaries, he not only reſtored *Gregorie*, the xj. moneth after his depoſall to his priſtinate dignity: But alſo this good and moſt excellent Emperor, left an example to his ſucceſſors, that theſe proud Churchmen were not to be managed by lenity and mildneſſe, but to be curbed by roughneſſe and ſeuerity. For it was the receiued opinion of that age, that looke which of the *Cæſars* ſhewed himſelfe to be of more milde diſpoſition, then ſome others; ſo much the more wantonlike would they dally with his lenity, and more baſely proſecute him with railings, & foule-mouthed reproches; As by that which followeth, I will clearely make manifeſt vnto you.

Henricus Niger.

Hee ruled Anno Chriſti. 1039. *In England* Harold Harefoot.

THis ſeuerity of *Otho*, laſt before ſpoken off in puniſhing the treaſon of *Iohn*, for ſome certaine time ſo terrified the Biſhops, that vntill the ſmart was forgotten, openly they attempted,

Cardinal Benno of the life and geſts of Hildebrand.

attempted nothing againſt the Maieſty of the ſacred Empire. But no ſooner had *Benedict* the xj. by Satanicall and magicall Inchantmentes leaped into the place, but by how much his skil and confidence in that profeſſion was remarqueable, by ſo much the more inſolent was his cariage in the Popedome.

For no ſooner was *Conradus*, (a moſt faithfull ſteward of the Law and Religion, Emperor of Romans, alwaies *Auguſtus*) gathered to his fathers; but this *firebrand* going to counſell with his minion *Laurentius*, and other his fauorits; bendeth his ſtudies, how hee might diſpoſſeſſe *Henrie* the ſonne of *Conrade* from his hereditary ſucceſſion to the Crowne of the Empire; and diſturbe the peace of the Church with Schiſme and diſſenſion.

To the effecting of which ſtratageme, hee ſendeth the Crowne of the Romane Empire vnto *Peter* King of *Hungarie*, with this Motto vnder written.

Petra dedit Romam Petro: tibi Papa Coronam.

The Rocke gaue *Peter* Rome: to thee the *Pope* this Crowne.

But the Emperour, vnder the leading of *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorain*, a moſt excellent Souldier, and faithfull ſeruitor, confronted *Peter*, tooke him Priſoner; and further, meaning to repay *Theophilact* the ringleader vnto ſo dangerous a Schiſme, according to his deſerts, ſet forward for *Rome*. Vpon brute whereof, *Theophilact*, (alias *Benedict* the ninth) ſtroken in remorſe of conſcience, and amazed with terrour, bartered the Papacie to one of his Companions, the Archprieſt of *Saint Iohns de Porta latina*, the Maſter of *Hildebrand*, for the Summe of one thouſand and fiue hundred pounds.

pounds. Who aſcending the Seate by the ſtaires of ſuch abominable iniquitie, by changing his Name, was thenceforth ſtiled, *Gregorie* the ſixt.

Now is the Cup brimfull; and the Papacie ſo managed, that all good men being either reiected or oppreſſed, euery other party, as he was caried away by ambition, or inabled for briberie, caſt to lay hold-faſt vpon this ſo high a ſtep of Dignitie; more entring like theeues and robbers by the windowe, then by the doore. So that in theſe dayes (beſides the Archprieſt *Iohn Gratian*) aſcended alſo into this Seate of iniquitie; *Iohn* Biſhop of *Sauoy* who (changing his Name) was otherwiſe nominated *Silueſter* the third. Thus was the Roman Church ren tinto diuers factions: Three *Popes* appeared at one inſtant, *viz.* *Benedict* the ninth, *Silueſter* the third, and *Gregorie* the ſixt, and euery one claimeth lawfull ſucceſſion in *Peters* Chaire, and pleadeth poſſeſſion. Where is now the Church? Who is this head? Who ſhall now ſtand vp to arbitrate ſo difficult a controuerſie? None is now to be ſeene but the Emperour; And him, without queſtion, ſurnamed *Niger*, God himſelfe ſtirred vp (hauing ſet *Germanie* in good order) with an Armie to trauaile into *Italy*, where calling a Councell, he inforceth *Theophilact* to flie: Hee impriſoned *Gregorie*, and afterward with *Hildebrand*, exiled him into *Germanie*. The Biſhop of *Sauoy* he diſpatched to his charge; and in their places conſecrated *Synaoger* Biſhop of *Bamberg*, otherwiſe called *Clement* the ſecond. Of whom he receiued the inauguration of the Imperiall Crowne, and then inforced the Romans to take an Oath: *That thereafter they ſhould neuer preſume to meddle with the Election of a Romane Biſhop, without*

Benno. Platin. in the life of Silueſter the third and Gregorie the ſixt.

out expreſſe Commiſsion firſt obtained from the Emperour.

For his moſt excellent Maieſtie did well foreſee, that in thoſe times the world was giuen to ſo much licentious libertie, that euery factious and Potent companion, though moſt ignoble, would not ſticke to arrogate vnto himſelfe that ſo eminent a dignitie, by corruption and vnderhand-courſes, which by the ſtrict commandement of God, was not to be beſtowed vpon any liuing creature, ſaue him who for learning and ſanctitie of life, ought worthily to bee preferred thereunto.

This vſage now grew vnto ſo inueterate a cuſtome, that euery ſedicious and wicked varlet preſumed, that hee might without ſcruple of conſcience vſurpe vpon Saint *Peters* Chaire; As did *Damaſus* the ſecond, by birth a *Bauarian.* This man hauing gotten poyſon for his purpoſe, ſlue *Clement*, and laboured by villanie to attaine to that promotion, which whilom was accuſtomed to bee beſtowed onely vpon vertue. But God, the moſt iuſt reuenger of ſuch wickedneſſe preuented him, and the three and twentie day after his vſurped inſtallment, ſent him to accompanie the dead in the place of darkeneſſe.

Henricus quartus.

He raigned in the yeere of Chriſt 1056. *in Germanie. In England* Edward *the Confeſſor.*

ALbeit, that euen hitherto, from the dayes of *Charlemaine*, the Romane Biſhops being generally poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of Supremacie, by ſleights and deuiſes, did continually oppoſe themſelues againſt the Maieſty of the Empire, and left no practiſe vnattempted, that might weaken or diſcountenance the Emperors ſoueraignty; that ſo they might diſpoſe of all things at their pleaſures without all feare of controlment: yet was it not the will of Almighty God, to ſuffer them as yet totally to caſt off the yoke of duty, by warrant of Holy writ inueſted vpon Princes and great perſonages placed in Authority. But what can humane wiſedome plead in ſearch of Gods purpoſes? *perdere quos vult Iupiter, & hos dementat*: For now the malice, impiety and treaſon of the Roman Clergy, together with their diabolicall ambition, eſpecially vnder that figuratiue Dragon (*Gregorie* the ſeuenth) grew like a violent tempeſt ſo outragious and exorbitant, that thoſe times may truly be recorded to be the daies, which vtterly razed, blemiſhed, and wounded the Maieſty of this famous empire with the fatall ruine of glory and Honor.

For this miſchieuous monſter, not contented to haue poiſoned ſix Biſhops, and to haue depoſed his Maſter *Alexander*, for imploring aſſiſtance from the Emperor,

Emperor; Neither mindfull of the fauours which *Henrie* (ſurnamed *Niger*) had afforded him, in curteouſly diſmiſſing him from perpetuall Impriſonment, ſeperated from the company and ſight of all mortall creatures, whereinto (as we told you before) he had beene condemned with *Gregorie* the ſixt: At what time, the *Normans* raged through *Apulia*, *Calabria* and *Campania*, partly relying vpon the great wealth of *Matilda*, a moſt potent woman in thoſe daies, and partly animated to ſee the Empire diſtracted with moſt dangerous wars raiſed by the warlike Nation of the *Saxons* againſt the Emperor, ſcarce three yere ſeated in his gouernment; together with the reuolt of the Germane Biſhops whom the Impoſtor our perpetuall aduerſary had ſeduced from the ſeruice of their Maſter: Then I ſay, this man firſt of all other, againſt the cuſtom of his predeceſſors, abſolutely vſurped vpon the Papacy, without all conſent of the Emperor, before that time alwaies accuſtomed to be mediated in the Election of theſe Biſhops.

Of this Matilda, whence and what ſhe was, ſee Krantzius lib. 5. Saxon.

And in future; to preuent the reſidue of the Biſhops and Abbots from ſeeking their confirmations at the Emperors hands, he ſet forth a decree vnder pain of Excommunication; *That hee had not onlie power in heauen to bind and to looſe, but alſo that he had plenitude of iuriſdiction in Earth, to take away, and to giue Empires, Kingdomes and Principalities.* *Then* began he impudently to boaſt: to vſurpe vpon the temporall and Supreme iuriſdiction, and that by a law of his own coyning: to eſteeme of Kings and Emperors as tenants at will: to impriſon *Cæſars* Ambaſſadors oppoſing againſt his inſolencies, & finally leading them through

Formula decreti extat. C. ſi quis deinceps.

Rome

Rome in ignominious manner, to expell them the city.

Henrie, albeit he were infinitely perplexed with the war of *Saxonie*, yet knowing that this nouell and vnvsual pertinacie of the Biſhop, was not to be forgotten, calleth a Councell at *Wormes*; wherein, audience being giuen to the Ambaſſadors, which came from *Rome*, and *Hildebrands* diſloyall Letters being read; beſides the *Saxons*, all the *German* and *French Biſhops*, made a Decree; *That ſithence Pope Hildebrand a fugitiue Monke firſt of all other incroched vpon the Papacie without the good liking or priuity of the Romane Emperor, conſtituted of God to be his Soueraigne Lord, and that, contrarie to the Cuſtome of his Predeceſſors, contrarie to law, and contrarie to his oth of inſtalment: And moreouer had vſurped vpon both iuriſdictions, the temporall and Eccleſiaſticall, as the Decij and worſhippers of falſe Gods were accuſtomed to doe:* That *ipſo facto* he was depoſed from his Biſhoprick; for ſheep were no longer to be intruſted to the keeping of ſuch a woluiſh Shepheard.

One *Rowland* a Clerke of *Parma*, was diſpatched to *Rome* with letters containing the ſentence of the Councel: In whoſe Name he was commanded to interdict *Gregorie* from all Eccleſiaſticall Function; and moreouer to enioyn the Cardinals, that making choice of another for Biſhop, they ſhould preſent him to the Emperor.

In like maner, *Cæſar* himſelfe dateth his Letters vnto *Hildebrand*, to the Clergy, and the Roman people: commanding according to the Iniunction of the Councell; That himſelfe ſhould returne to a priuate life; and That, they forſaking *Hildebrand*, according to their accuſtomed Priuiledges ſhould proceede to the

election of a New Paſtor.

At the receit of this newes, *Hildebrand* became not ſo much lenified, as furiouſly exaſperated, and inſolently imboldned. For, whereas before he had Excommunicated but ſome certaine of the Emperors familiars, whoſe aduice he preſumed *Cæſar* to haue vſed in theſe his proceedings: now preſumeth hee by nouell preſident to Excommunicate *Cæſar* himſelfe in a helliſh conuenticle, againſt the order of Chriſtian piety, ratified by the ſacred Canons of Holy writ; Him, I ſay he preſcribeth, depriueth of all kingly Authority, diſpoileth of his Kingdom, and abſolueth his Subiects from their oths of obedience.

Vide formulam abrogationis apud Plat in. in vita Gregorij. 7. Benno.

Behold, he was no ſooner riſen from the Seat wherin he ſat to Excommunicate *Cæſar*, but the Chaire being lately made of ſtrong and new timber, ſuddenly by the prouidence of God in moſt terrible manner was rent into a thouſand ſhatters: manifeſtly foreſhewing, That by that raſh and vnaduiſed Excommunication, this cruell Sciſmaticke ſhould proue the Author of a moſt fearefull diuiſion in the Church of God.

And ſurely theſe were neither blind nor idle predictions. For the Princes and German Biſhops, taking notice of the Curſe, ſome vpon a vaine ſuperſtition, ſome in hope of bettering their eſtates, and others in remembrance of their ancient hatred againſt *Henrie*, at the next aſſembly of the States, threatning a Reuolt, vnleſſe he would ſuppliantly deſire forgiueneſſe of the Pope (now reſolued to come into *Germanie*) brought the controuerſie vnto ſo narrow a pinch, and his Maieſty into ſuch miſtruſts of deſpaire, with the diſpoiling him of his reall poſſeſſion, That he was fain

to

to promiſe the Princes, that hee would goe vnto the *Pope*, and perſonally craue abſolution at his foot.

Wherupon putting off his regall habiliments, with his wife and yong ſonne barefooted, and clothed in canuaſſe, being made a ſpectacle for Angells and men to admire at, in a moſt bitter winter, and a moſt dangerous kind of trauell, commeth to *Canuſium* where the *Pope* then reſided: There before the gates of the City faſting and ſutor-like from morning till euentide, he danceth attendance: Meane while *Hildebrand* within, amongſt whores and ſhauelings laugheth him to ſcorne. Three daies he patiently indureth this lamentable affliction, deſiring admittance. He is denied. At three daies end inſtancing admittance with greater importunacie, It is anſwered; *That his Holineſſe is not yet at leyſure to attend his ſuit.* *Henrie* by patience making a vertue of neceſſity (In that he could not be admitted into the City) contenteth himſelf to abide in the Suburbs, but not without many incommodious greeuances. For the wether was ſharpe, and all places appeared hoary with froſt.

Benno. Nauclerus generatione 36. Vrſpergenſis. Platina in loco ante citato.

At laſt, after his inceſſant three-daies petitioning, and deniall, at the inſtance of *Maud* the Counteſſe of *Adelaus* Earle of *Sauoie*, and the *Abbot of Clunois*, he is admitted vnto preſence.

Vpon the fourth day in ſigne of vnfained penitency, he reſigned his Crowne and imperiall Enſignes, and maketh a proteſtation that hee were vnworthy to enioy the Title of an Emperor, if he ſhould againe commit the like offences againſt the Roman Sea, as formerly he had done.

For all this, this inexorable Prelat would neither pardon nor absolue him, vnlesse *he would put in good securitie, that according vnto his Popish pleasure he would expiate the offence in a Councell, and beforth comming at euerie day and place appointed, (there the* Pope *being Iudge) to answer vnto all accusations without once plotting in his thoughts anie scruple of reuenge.*

2. *Yea after his purgation, and reconciliation, either to retain, or forsake his kingdom, if the Pope thought it so fitting*

3. *Thirdlie, that before the Examination of his Cause, he should not presume to weare anie Kinglie habit, neither haue borne before him anie Imperiall ensignes, That hee should not meddle in state gouernment, nor exact anie oth of allegiance vpon his vassalls.*

The Pope will deale surely.

Vpon promise of performance, and future obedience, the attonement is now at length confirmed aswell by Oth as Indenture, and *Henrie* absolued.

Now obserue I beseech you, the restlesse humours of attainted consciences. The Court of shauelings, deep polititians, men of profound reaches; and admirable well seen in the principles of Machiuell, and carefull aswell to preuent future blowes, as to oppose against present perils, either reuoluing in their far reaching wits, or suspecting in their seared consciences, that *Henrie* beeing sure seated in a peaceable estate, could not possibly disgest so vilanous an indignity, nor the world allow of so base a tiranny; fall againe to their old plots, but a new Counsell; viz. how they might vtterly dispossesse *Henrie* of his Empire. *Rodulph* Duke of *Sweuia*, *Henries* brother in law, is presented with a golden Crowne, thus inscribed.

Petra

Petra dedit Petro, Petrus diadema Rodulpho:

And withall the Biſhops of *Mayunce* and *Colen* are commanded, that (rebelling againſt *Henrie*) they ſhold ſet it vpon *Rodulphs* head, and aſſiſt him therin to the vtmoſt of their forces. Was it for Loue, or Honor may the world diſpute, that the Pope became thus bountifull of an other mans patrimony, to beſtow it vpon *Rodulph*? Or doth any Hiſtory make mention that *Rodulph* was a more kinde Son to the Church, then *Henrie*? Beleeue me, the Pope did neither vpon any ſuch reſpects, it was far from his imagination. But this was the windlace of all: if *Henrie* muſt liue in peace, *Henrie* muſt ſeek reuenge: but if the Duke of *Sweuia* find him play on one ſide, *Romandiola* ſhall be ſecured on the other ſide. Let *Rodulph* or *Henrie* ſinke or ſwim, meane while *res noſtræ tutiores redduntur*, that is, the Court of Rome may ſecurely ſwagger; If *Henrie* haue the better, yet ſhall he be much the weaker: if *Henrie* haue the worſe, then all the care is taken, for *Rodulph* is infinitly beholding vnto vs. And be it as be may: nether party (being potent Princes) ſhall haue cauſe to laugh at their bargain; let time try the ſequell; and ſo it happned. O the blind folly of ambition.

For albeit that *Rodulph* was the Emperors ſworne liege-man, his brother in law by mariage, indowed with the Dukedom of *Sweuia* after his deceaſe, and honored with many other fauours: notwithſtanding being ſeduced by the faire and falſe proteſtations of the Biſhops, and borne out by his own greatneſſe and the ſuccours of *Saxonie*, he inuadeth the Empire, and rebelliouſly to his vtmoſt power moueth war againſt his Soueraigne maſter.

Cæſar by the admoniſhment of the Biſhop of *Argentine*, ſeeing the danger ariſing from all parts, leuieth his people, affronteth *Rodolph*, and ſetteth all vpon the hazard of a battell. The iſſue whereof was this, That the *Pope* vpon miſtruſt of the worſt, commanded both parties to Peace, and that *Henrie* ſhould expect his ſentence at the Synode, which ſhortly hee would proclaime to be held in *Germanie*. Which limitation, when *Henrie* ſtomacked, vpon proteſtation that hee would ſuffer no Aſſembly to bee holden in *Germanie*, vnleſſe *Rodolph* were firſt remooued: The *Pope* (rather then hee would diſharten *Rodolph* by finall Peace) renueth the Excommunication, and ſendeth foorth his Mandates full ſtuffed with helliſh furie. *Henrie* is nothing abaſhed, but the third time giueth the battell at *Eliſtrum* of *Miſia*, and there ouerthroweth his enemy. This came to paſſe in the yeere 1080. the Ides of October.

The forme of the Curſe is extant in Platina.

Vrſperg. fol. 238 doth witneſſe this conference betweene the King and the Biſhops.

Rodolph being grieuouſly wounded, and from the field conueied to *Merſeburg*, intreateth the Biſhops and the Leaders of his people to compeere before him. Where being aſſembled, *Rodolph* feeling death ſeazing vpon him, ſtretched forth his right hand and ſaid: *My Lords, this is the hand with which I plighted my faith to my Lord* Henrie. *At your intreaties, thus, and thus many times hath it vnfortunately fought againſt him: Returne yee, and make good your firſt Othes to the King: I am to depart to my fathers.*

See the iudgement of God.

Rodolph being vanquiſhed, and *Germanie* by his death reſonably well quieted, *Henrie* neither forgetting *Hildebrands* iniuries; neither hauing his ſpirits ſo peaceably affected, but that hee could call to remembrance,

brance, how the *Pope* had twiſe Excommunicated him; how for three dayes ſpace being a moſt ſuppliant Petitioner in a very cold ſeaſon, he could attaine no reconciliation; As alſo, that cunningly hee had aſſiſted his enemie, euen the competitor of his Kingdome, proclaimeth a Synod of the Biſhops of *Italy*, *Lombardy*, and *Germanie*, to bee celebrated at *Brixia* a Citie of *Norica*.

Where being aſſembled, and the Acts of *Hildebrand* examined, with one conſent they promulge this ſuffrage.

For that it is apparently knowne, that Hildebrand *was not Elected of God, but moſt impudently by fraud and bribe-* *Abbas Vrſperg.*
rie, made his owne way to the Papall dignitie: And therein being ſeated, hath ſubuerted all the Orders of the Church, diſquieted the whole Chriſtian world; intended the death both of body and ſoule, to a moſt peaceable and Catholicke King; defended a periurd Prince, and amongſt the peaceable, ſowed ſeedes of diſcord, &c. Wee here Congregated by the Grace of God, and aſſiſted by the Legats and letters of nineteene Biſhops, aſſembled againſt the foreſaid Hildebrand *at* Mognuce *the eight day of Pentecoſt, doe canonically giue iudgement againſt the ſaid* Hildebrand, *That he is to bee depoſed and expelled, for vnaduiſedly Preaching of Sacriledges and factions, defending Periuries and Scandals; Abclieuer of Dreames and diuinations, a notorious Necromancer; a man poſſeſſed with an vncleane ſpirit; And therefore an Apoſtata from the true faith: And vnleſſe vpon the receite of this our iudgement, hee ſhall voluntarily reſigne the Seate, we doe finally Accurſe him.*

Theſe buſineſſes being thus diſpatched, and *Germanie* quieted, in the yeer 1081. the Emperour iournyeth

to

to Rome, and pitching his Campe before the Caſtle of Saint *Peter*, hee chargeth the Romanes with ſo many aſſaults, that they are glad to pray for Peace, and to open their Gates. The Biſhop with his followers retireth into the Baſtile of *Adrian*: wherein being beſieged, he worketh the Emperour more diſquiet by craft and ſubtiltie, then the Emperour could doe him, by Mine or Engine. For as *Henrie* accuſtomed frequently to make his Oriſons in Saint *Maries* in *Mount Auentine*, this Traitour ſuborned a certaine villaine, ſecretly to conuey vpon the Rafters of the Church, great and maſſiue ſtones; and ſo to diſpoſe them, that as the Emperour ſhould kneele at his Prayers, from aloft they ſhould fall vpon his head, and daſh out his braines.

As this villanous Regicide, the Miniſter of Popiſh iniquitie, was haſtning his diſſiegne, and labouring to fit this maſsie ſtone to the execution of his Treaſon, the ſtone fell down and drew this villaine downe withall: So that bruiſing the Table whereon it fell, ſupported with ſtrong Treſſels, it reſted on the Pauement, and there by the iudgement of God, daſhed in pieces the carkiſe of this Trayterous workman. The Romanes vpon notice of the Treaſon, faſtning a corde to one of his legges, for three dayes ſpace dragged him along through the ſtreetes of the Citie.

This failing, had the *Pope* ſo ſhallow a pate, as to carie about him but one ſtring to his bow? Or was he ſo honeſt a man, that rather then hee would ſpare the blood of Chriſtian people, hee would giue ouer his owne life, nay his Seate, for the ſafrie of many thouſands? Obſerue what followeth: To be ſure, that neither *Germanie* ſhould long breath in peace, now *Rodolph*

was

was gone; nor the Emperour bee ſecured in *Italy*; he turneth to the Art of diuerſion (a point of Warre well knowne amongſt Souldiers) and ſtirreth vp the *Saxons* in his abſence to create *Harman* Prince of *Lucelburg* in *Lorain*, Emperour at *Iſleb.* by *Hercinia*: Who likewiſe by the prouidence of GOD at the ſiege of a certaine Caſtle, was miſerably ſlaine by the fall of a ſtone caſt from the battailement of the Wall by the hand of a ſiely woman.

Ab Vrſperg. Helmoldus in his 30. cap. of the hiſt. of Sclad Krantz. and innumerable others.

Hee being gone, (the Romiſh Religion will ſtill be dealing, rather then looſe one iot of their reputes, if they cannot otherwiſe preuaile) this inhumane Tyrant thirdly ſtirred vp *Ecbert* Marques of *Saxonie*: and him alſo God predeſtinated to ſuffer condigne puniſhment for his Rebellion. For the fift yeere after, he was beſet in a Mill neere *Brunſwicke* by the Emperours Guard, and thete miſerably ſlaine.

Once againe, *Hildebrand* flieth to his wits, and perceiuing, that his ſtake in *Germanie* was cleane loſt; Himſelfe immured in a Baſtill, where he could not alwayes continue, and that he had ſmall reaſon to fall into the ſight of *Cæſar*, hee diſſembleth a parley, and during the conference Iudaſlike forſaking his companie, in diſguiſed habit flieth vnto *Salerne* amongſt the *Normans*.

I hope the Romaniſts of this age are not behind for ſhifts. &c.

Cæſar forthwith aſſembled a Senate of his Nobles and Biſhops, according to the cuſtome of his predeceſſors, giueth order for an Eccleſiaſticall Diet: *Where* Hildebrand, *as a thiefe and a robber; a perfidious fugitiue, a forſaker of the fold; a Traytor to the flocke, a debaiker of Chriſtian charitie, by the vniuerſall conſent of the Conuocation, is denounced and condemned.*

In his place is promoted *Guibert* Archbiſhop of *Rauenna*, a louer of Peace and Concord; a man learned and religious: By the conſent of the Cleargie hee is Conſecrated Biſhop by the name of *Clement* the third, in the yeere of Chriſt 1084. This done, he Rein-ſtalleth *Cæſar* and his ſpouſe *Bertha*, and ſaluteth them *Auguſti*, with the vniuerſall applauſe of the people. As for *Hildebrand*, either through griefe, or guiltineſſe of conſcience, he died in exile (as the ſaying is) *Ab aris & focis* in the Towne of *Salerne*.

But this firebrand of Warre and diſcord being extinguiſhed, the furie of the Prelates amongſt themſelues was neuer the neere allayed; howbeit, thereby, the world enioyed peace; and *Germanie* her priſtinate Maieſtie.

For *Vrban* (after *Victor* the ſecond, a Biſhop but of a fewe dayes ſtanding) intruded vpon the Papacie at *Gurſtung* by the faction of *Hildebrand*, but eſpecially by the money of *Matilda*, and the Armes of the *Normans*. Him the Emperour with the greater part of his Nobilitie accuſed of Irreligion, and denounced him in the number of the wicked. This fellow, notwithſtanding that he had long wandered *ſine lare, ſine grege*, yet he ſo artificially finiſhed the webbe begun by *Hildebrand*, that inſtead of *Vrbanus*, the world ſtiled him *Turbanus*, yea, hee went far beyond his Schoolemaſter *Hildebrand* in wit and villanie.

Benno.

For, being not able any way to wrong *Henrie* by ſecret inuaſion (Papiſts will doe nothing openly, or at leaſt without pretext) he commandeth the Canons of that moſt peſtilent knaue *Hildebrand*, to be confirmed and holden in force againſt him.

Ab. Vrſperg. Auentinus. Naucler.

Then

Then draweth he into Parricide *Cunrade* the ſonne of *Henry*, begotten on his firſt wife, by his fathers appoint ment Viceroy of *Italy*. Vpon him he beſtowed *Matilda* the wife of *Roger* the *Norman*, and by him expulſeth *Clement* the third, Inſtalled by the good liking and conſent of his father.

But *Vrban* and *Cunrade* being both quickly diſpatched, *Paſchal* the ſecond loth to come behind his predeceſſors in Treacherie, and taking it for good Policie, to giue *Cæſar* no breathing time to prouide againſt tempeſts, by the example of *Vrban*, in a Synode at Rome reuiueth and ratifieth the Curſe of *Gregorie* againſt the Emperour. Buls are but words, and words are no weapons for *Popes*. Whereupon a quicker corasiue muſt bee applied: The other Sonne of *Henrie* (named alſo *Henrie*) the Princes of *Aquiſgrane* muſt ſalute as *Cæſar*, notwithſtanding that already he had giuen his father his Oth of Loyaltie and true Leigeman.

O Lord! where ſhall not a man finde a man for blood, if promotion, or money, or Mariage be offered for recompence; but eſpecially, if the man of blood may reſort vnto a Churchman, and receiue abſolution for ſo cruell and vnpardonable miſchieſes? Of ſuch perſons, and ſuch ſtratagems, behold in thoſe dayes the *Popes* made their eſpeciall vſes: they may be as bold in theſe times and in theſe points to pleade vniuerſalitie and antiquitie, as they did and doe for their Maſſe, and the reſidue of their trumperie. For yong *Henrie* is vp in parricidiall Rebellion: *Papa impellit*, ſaith the Hiſtorie: and being borne out by the Armes of the *Saxons*, ſo caried the Warre, that this moſt valorous Emperour, and ſtout reuenger of the impeached Maieſtie

of the Empire, being harried with continuall conflicts, and weary of his life through the perpetuall burden of Popish vexations, as he trauailed towards the Dyet of *Mogunce*, by treason vpon the high way, and that against a publique oth of safe conduct, was taken by his Sonne *Henrie*: then being degraded most vnwillingly of all imperiall ensignes, as also of his Crowne by the Bishops of *Mogunce*, *Colen* and *Wormes*; hee was committed to prison in the towne of *Leyge*: where pining to death through griefe, he finished his troublesome daies in this most lamentable maner.

Krantzius li.5. c.22. Vrsperg.362. Helmold. in the annals of Sclauony.li.1.ca.32.

Notwithstanding such was the irreconcilable rancor of these charity-preaching fathers, that they not contented with these their most cruell turmoiles practised against his life; Hyena-like, with as barbarous bestiality they also preyed vpon his liueless carkasse. For the body being already buried in the monastery of *Leyge*, they inforced the Bishop of the place to dig it vp againe, and without either honor to so great a personage, or reuerence to holy sepulture, they commanded it to bee cast amongst other carcases into a prophane place. The reason was grounded vpon one of their owne Canons: *Quibus viris ecclesia non communicat, illis etiam nec mortuis communicare possit*. Repentance *etiam in nouissima hora*, and the reward of him that came into the vineyard at the cloze of the day, equalized to his, that began to worke in the dawning, is of no force with them. It is scripture; and scripture, you know, is not sufficient for saluation. I quake in writing. Councels may controll *It*; the Church, *The Councels*; and who is the Church? the Pope; For otherwise it were folly to broche so many positions, as it doth, against

See more hereof D. Barlo 240. at full.

againſt law, conſcience and ſound diuinity, if it lay not in their fulneſſe of power to doe and vndoe, ſay and vnſay.

To conclude, at laſt, the body is conueyed in a coffin of ſtone from *Leyge* to *Spire*, and there alſo for fiue yeeres ſpace, it remained without the duties of Chriſtian buriall.

See Krantz. lib. 5. Vrſperg. fo. 264. H. Mutius ſeuenteenth of his Cronicles.

Henrie the fift.

NOw let vs ſee, if *Henrie* the fift, ſeduced by the witchcraft of the falſe Pope, to vſurpe vpon the Empire of his father, experimented any other allowance of loue and fidelity from the Biſhops, then did his anceſtor.

Comming vnto Rome to be crowned with the imperiall Dyadem, he thought it much to concerne his honor, to demand reſtitution of his right in the confirmation of Biſhops, Abbots and Prelates. The Pope forgetfull of all former fauours, doth ſtoutly deny the motion. From requeſt they fall to blowes, inſomuch that the Pope with certaine of his ſeruants was taken priſoner, and conueied to Mount *Soracte*, now called Mount *Silueſter*.

Paſchal ſeeing no remedy, ſent vnto the City for Notaries, and at length confirmeth and reuiueth to the vſe of the Empire, the auncient prerogatiues claymed by the EMPEROVRS in the Crea-

C. Adrian. c. in ſynodo 63. diſtinct. c. inter vos.

tion and Inueſtiture of *Popes* and Biſhops: and in requitall is honoured againe by the Emperour, with many rich preſents.

But ſuch was the iuſt iudgement of God towards this *Henrie*; that as he obſerued not faith towards his father, no more did others keep towards him. For euen thoſe men who for his ſake had forſaken his father, riſe now in rebellion againſt the Son. For preſently vpon his returne in the yeere 1116. into *Germanie*, the Pope congregateth a full Councell of his owne creatures, and there bewailing his ſinne, which he had committed in ſurrendring his priuileges; after long and ſolemne debating of the caſe, vndoeth all he had done before; confirmeth the Decrees of *Gregorie* the ſeuenth; and vpon the cuſtome lately taken vp, Excommunicateth *Henrie*.

A Pretext for Periurie.

Hereupon many the Princes of *Germanie*, and eſpecially the Biſhop of *Mogunce* fall into rebellion. *Cæſar* ſendeth vnto the Pope, to treat a peace, but by his death that buſineſſe was determined.

After his deceaſe the Cardinalls create *Gelaſius* Pope, neither calling *Cæſar* to Councell, nor once acquainting him with their determinations. Whereat *Cæſar* being agreeued, flyeth to Rome, & conſecrateth *Mauritius* Archbiſhop of *Brachar* for Pope.

Gelaſius being depoſed, and *Maurice* confirmed, they both conſpire with ioynt conſent to curſe the Emperor in his retrait from Rome, diſperſing their Miniſters through *Germanie* after the precedents of their predeceſſors to incite the Subiects of the Emperor to rebellion. *Henrie* fearing the ſequell, haſtneth into *Germany*.

Gelaſius being dead, *Calixtus* the ſecond being his ſuc-

ſucceſſor, warreth vpon the Antipope, whom as wee told you the Emperour had conſecrated. *Henrie* perceiuing the *Pope*, vnderborne by the Armes of the *Normans*, to bee too ſtrong for him, and that he began to meate the ſame meaſure towards him, as his predeceſſors had towards his father: In the yeere 1122. by the ſpeciall mediation of the Apoſtolicke Legat *Lampert*, afterward *Pope*, and called *Honorius*, he became ſo deuote a Conuert to Papacie, that hee reſigned his whole right of Inueſtiture concerning the *Ring* and the *Staffe*; granted a free Election and Conſecration to be thenceforth vſed in all Churches; and couenanted to reſtore, or at leaſt, to cauſe to be reſtored all Regalities, formerly renounced, or at leaſt as many as remained in his diſpoſe.

The *Pope* againe couenanted, that the Election of Biſhops and Abbots ſhould be done in the Emperors preſence, without violence: ſo farre foorth that the Elect ſhould receiue his Regalities, by the Scepter from the Emperour. This *Concord* bore date at *Wormes*, *Nono Cal. Octob. Anno Dom. M. C. XXII.*

But, albeit this *Henrie* vtterly diſcouraged with the Thunder-bolts of curſes, gaue way to all Popiſh vſurpations, and to the euerlaſting ſtaine and impoueriſhment of the Germane Empire, thruſt his necke vnder the yoke of the Romiſh tyrannie, yet, in regard of new tumults and rebellions practiſed in *Belgia* and the higher *Germanie*, he could not liue out the remainder of his daies in affected peace. For appeazement whereof, as he trauelled towards *Vtrick*, he fell ſicke, and died without iſſue. This accident, and not iniuſtly, men argued, to haue proceeded from the iudgement of God,

for

for that contrary to his commandement, he had behaued himselfe so vngraciously towards a father, that had so well deserued of him his sonne.

Lotharius Saxo.

Hee raigned in the yeere 1125. *about the fiue and twentie yeere of* Henry *the first.*

HENRIE being gone, and *Germanie* still reeking in blood and ciuill war: The greatest care that the Bishops tooke, was to prouide, that the people should not reunite their forces, and take time to breath from these inhumane and vnnaturall murders. Whereupon after the death of *Henrie*, when as *Cunrade* Duke of *Sweuia*, *Henrie* the fift sisters sonne, laied claime to the Empire; against him by the cunning of *Albert* Archbishop of *Mogunce*, they set vp *Lotharius* Duke of *Saxonie*, the man in truth whose infidelity they had vsed in the miscarriage of *Henrie* the fifth.

Cunrade is now in march, and hauing ouertopped mount *Septim.* is honorably receiued of the *Millanois* and crowned by the Archbishop Anselme at *Modoecia*, the chiefe Sea of the Kingdome of *Italie*. *Honorius*, in fauour of *Lotharius*, and in despight of the House of *Henrie* (which he thirsted vtterly to extinguish) deposeth *Anselme*, and by the terror of his Curses inforceth *Cunrade* to post out of *Italie*: Who finally in despaire of the Germane aide by reason of their factions and dissensions,

Otho frising. li. 7. ca. 17. Nauclerus gen. 38.

diſſenſions, vtterly giueth ouer his further hopes of inioying the Empire, and by the mediation of *S. Bernard* of *Clareual*, falleth to make his peace with his corriuall *Lotharius*.

Lotharius being now ſole and abſolute Lord of the Empire, according to his Saxoniſh ſimplicity, honouring the Papall Sea with more then common obſeruancie, ceaſeth not to deſerue well thereof by all the offices of loue and duty, which an obedient ſonne to the Church could poſſibly imagine to performe. *Innocentius* the ſecond, the ſucceſſor of *Honorius*, expulſed by *Anacletus* Antipope and *Roger* Duke of Apulia, flying vnto him for ſuccour, to his infinit charge he reſtored to his Sea at Barionea.

But beleeue me, neither theſe kind offices, nor any worldly reſpects, were of ability either to fruſtrate or to mollifie the Popiſh auarice: for when the Pope had declared *Lotharius* Emperor, he made ſhew as if he would againe ſeeke reſtitution of the auncient rites, which the Empire claimed in the election of Biſhops and Abbots: But the rauenous Pope not only refuſed to vnlooſen his talents vpon what he had already ſeiſed, but alſo re-attaching whatſoeuer *Lotharius* himſelf either by the perſwaſion of *Bernard*, or in feare of further ſedition, had voluntarily offered to the Romiſh ſea, he laboured by all other meanes to adde more to the former, through his immeſurable avarice.

Naucl. gen. præallegata, ſaith that this was done at Leyden, before his iourny into Italy.

Otho Friſing. and Naucler. in the fore alleged places.

For when *Lotharius* hauing expulſed *Roger* the Apulean; would haue beſtowed the Dutchy vpon Earle *Reignold* the generall of his armie; the Biſhop impleded him, as concerning the right of donation, with ſo vehement a contention, that neither being minded to

veeld to other, the controuerſie at laſt was faine to be thus determined: viz. *That both parties ſhould lay their hands vpon the Staffe of the Feodarie enſigne, then to be deliuered to the new Duke of* Apulia: *Thereby ſignifying that both of them had equall intereſt in the tranſportation of that Dukedome.*

So that, the more humility accompanied with ſweet behauiour and moderation, that this all-praiſe-worthy Emperor ſhewed towards the Papacie: The more the waywardneſſe and malice of the Romaniſts began to ſhew it ſelfe, and that without feare or modeſty. For whereas this Emperor in receiuing the Diademe had caſt himſelfe at the *Popes* feete, the Clergie, to vſe the precedent to the debaſement of ſucceeding Emperors; and to deliuer it as a trophee to poſterity, as ſoon as his backe was turned, ſet vp in the Lateran pallace his protraiture, with this inſcription.

Rex venit ante fores, iurans prius vrbis honores:
Poſt homo fit Papæ, ſumit quo dante Coronam.

The King attends before the gates: and ſweares the City-rites to keepe:
From Romes great Paſtor takes his Crowne, and vowes to hold in vaſſalage.

What was this, but a bewraying firſt of their frowardneſſe, manifeſted in deſpiſing the Maieſty of ſo high a calling; and ſecondly of their pride, in that forſooth, they would ſeem either to ouertop, or obſcure, the victorious geſts of him, who to his immortall commendation had ſubiected vnder tribute, the Duke of *Polonia*, the *Pomeranes* and the *Ruſſies*: who I ſay, to the no ſmall honor of the Maieſty Imperiall; had inforced the King of *Denmarke* to beare the ſword at his Coronati-

Cuſp. in the life of Lotharius of Saxonie.

on;

on; had ſubiugated the ſtates of *Cremona*, and *Papia*, and brought the vanquiſhed *Bononians* and *Piemontois* into the forme of a prouince: and finally with the conqueſt of *Apulia*, had brought vnder obedience many moſt noble Cities in that Dutchy. Now is he vanquiſhed, and acknowledged the Popes bondſlaue. For what other ſignification doth the Popes (Creature) import, but to be his vaſſall or ſeruant? Such are theſe admirable *ſeruants of ſeruants*, whom euen Emperors themſelues are glad to acknowledge and reſpect as Lords and Maſters. *Naucl. Gen. 38.* *Hominem fieri.*

Conradus tertius.

He raigned in the yeere of Christ 1138. *about the third yeere of King* Steuen.

Lotharius, in his ſecond retrait out of *Italie*, being departed this world not farre from *Trent*, *Conrade* the ſame Prince (whom as before we told you) the malicé of *Honorius* had fruſtrated of the Empire, and baniſhed *Italie*, now ſucceedeth his dead predeceſſor. But, albeit (after the deceaſe of *Lotharius*) the Princes of the Empire, and that in the preſence of *Theodoret* the Popes legate, and with his very good liking, did elect him King of Romans, yet by no meanes could the Popes aſſent be gotten to perfect the Election. *Cuſpin. in the life of Conrade.*

For whereas hee had conferred to *Roger* Duke of *Apulia*, that Dukedome, with the titulary dignity of a Kingdome, in liew of ranſome for himſelfe, and his

Cardinalls taken in battell; and *Conrade* in preiudice of the Empire would neither ratifie, nor hearken vnto ſo vnreaſonable a motion: *Nocentius* complotting with *Roger*, incited *Guelfo* Duke of *Bauaria*, to rebell againſt *Conrade*, for that hee could not obtaine at his hands the graunte of his brothers Dutchie: Herewith, the Emperour had ſo much to doe to defend his owne, that hee quite forgot to thinke vpon the recouery of *Sicil* and *Apulia*. Behold here a preſident of Papall fidelity, if his auarice bee not ſupplied by loſſe to the State.

Naucler out of Antoninus and Godfridus Gen.38.

Nauc.gen.38. & 32.

About this time theſe fatall factions of the *Guelfes* and *Gibellines* (whereof others haue diſcourſed) began in Germanie.

Bartolus in a peculiar book of the Guelphs and Gibellines. Panorm. in c. Lucanis & Piſanis de reſt. ſpol. Cuſpin. in the life of Fred. the ſecond.

For as Nauclerus reporteth out of *Hermanus*, whilſt the battell was fighting betweene *Conrade* and *Guelfo*, thoſe of the Kings party tooke for their word or Motto, *Hie Wiebling*, which is as much to ſay, *The King*: as being nobly diſcended from a village of that appellation: Thoſe which followed *Guelfo*, reclaimed, *Hie welf*. Where after it came to paſſe, that thoſe two denomidations of *Guelfes* and *Gibellines*, became the originall of all the factions in *Italy*. Which falling out happely for *Gregorie* the ninth to make vſe of, from thenceforth, he gaue them ſuch large entertainment, that no City, towne nor people were cleere from the infection of ſo ſpreading a contagion. For vpon no other ground, ſaue the vſe of theſe names, euen vntill our daies with more then admirable fury, City bandied againſt City, Prouince againſt Prouince, yea & in a City one part of the people confronted another.

Not only the factious people continued this diſſen-

ſion

ſion amongſt themſelues: but the Biſhops alſo in this quarrell proſecuted one another to the vtmoſt of their furie.

Amongſt others, that *Boniface* the eight, then whom the Romane Sea neuer indured a more fell monſter, perſecuted from place to place all thoſe whome hee knew to bee of the Gibelline faction, ranſacking and ſpoiling all places whereunto they made any repaire of abiding. Whereupon ſome finding no ſafety in Cities, ſetled their abodes in woods and forreſts: manie of the Gentrie, like wilde beaſtes inhabited the Sea coaſtes, and at laſt left *Italie* to bee companions with pirates. For they aſſured themſelues, that the Pirates could not haue vſed them worſe, then this Malefacius *Nero* would haue done, if he had once caught them in his clutches. *Plati. in the life of Bonef. the eight. Naucler. gen. 44.*

As for example: When hee heard that certaine of the contrarye faction were fledde to GENOA, hee poſted after them, with full determination by deſtroying them all, to haue razed their verie name from the memorie of mankinde through the whole world. Heere likewiſe it happened vpon Aſhwedneſdaie, as hee was caſting Aſhes according to Cuſtome amongſt the people: the Archbiſhop of the City kneeling vpon his Maribones with his head vncouered to receiue the Aſhes; the Pope by chaunce vnderſtanding that hee was a Gibelline; where his Holineſſe ſhould haue ſaide, *Remember Man that thou art but Aſhes, and into Aſhes thou ſhalt returne againe*: *Not ſo* (quoth the Pope) *Remember Man that thou art a Gibelline, and with the Gibellines thou muſt bee turned to duſt*:

and therewithall in a moſt furious manner, without once regarding the holineſſe of the place, the preſence of the people, or the regard of Religion, of ſet purpoſe (miſſing his head) he caſt great quantities thereof into his eyes: Afterward he depriued him, and then againe reſtored him.

At laſt by Gods iudgement it came to paſſe, that thoſe Gentlemen, who (as we told you) left *Italy* with the Pirats, returned againe, and gathering together ſome companies of ſuch as here & there lay lurking in feare of *Maleface*, breaking open the gates of the place where he lay, miſtruſting no ſuch aduerſe aduenture, they tooke him, and brought him priſoner to *Rome*: where in the ſpace of fiue and thirtie dayes, what for griefe and greatneſſe of ſtomacke, he breathed out his loathſome ſoule, ouer-laden with innumerable miſchiefes.

Fredericke Barbaroſſa.

He raigned Anno Chriſt. 1152. *about the ſeuenteenth yeare of King* Steuen.

FRederick, for his redde Beard, commonly termed *Barbaroſſa*, the ſonne of *Frederick* Duke of *Sweuia*, the brother of *Conrade*, a Prince of excellent partes both for body and minde, ſucceeded this *Conrade*, a Prince alſo no whit inferiour to his ſucceſſor for his honourable carriage in peace and warre.

To ſpeake little of his Nobility, it is recorded, that the

the intire right of the moſt noble Families of the *German* Common-wealth, *viz.* of the *Henries* of *Gweiblingen* and *Gwelforum* of *Altorff*, deſcended vpon him.

Howſoeuer; by the conſent of all writers, hee was reputed to bee of an excellent capacitie, prouident in Councell, of a good memorie, eloquent, conſtant and valiant, a good Souldier, and well practiſed in Armes; To the humble, courteous; To the peaceable, milde. Amongſt honeſt men, vertuous; Amongſt proude perſons, imcompatible. Very bountifull, and in ſcience of many humane ornaments, not immatcheable to any. In regard of which his manifold vertues, by the ſuffrage of the whole Nobilitie, he is declared Emperour, not without aſſured expectation, that through his worthineſſe, Peace ſhould be maintained through *Germanie*, the diſgraced forces of the Empire reſtored, and *Italy* now growne inſolent through continuall rebellion, brought into order and requiſite acknowledgment.

The Romiſh contentions with the Germane Emperours, by vile and nouell preſcription, ſeemed now ſo poſſeſſionated, that the Biſhops, by whoſe ſuffrage the Emperours were to be confirmed, began to make ſmall or no account of the Imperiall Maieſtie, which the prepoſterous ambition, and immatcheable pride of the Romaniſts, the Germane Princes (and who can blame them) taking to heart, could hardly diſgeſt: but by how much this noble *Heros* in the greatneſſe of his mind, meditated to abate the inſufferable pride of this pernicious rable: by ſo much the more found hee all things to oppoſe againſt him with more and more diſaduantage, to the impeachment of all his proiects.

Which

Which his noble exploits albeit they are not vnknowne to all men; neither is it any part of my minde, nor the proiect of this pamphlet to set them downe punctually (for so they would require an *Ilias*) yet by patience I will glance briefly at some of them, which in my iudgement shall sufficiently informe you, what was the obseruancie, and what the fidelity of the Bishops of these times, towards the sacred maiestie of this most worthy Emperour.

Obserue therefore, that the third yeare after his election, this *Frederic* hauing set *Germanie* in order, and especially through infinite paines taking procured a firme peace betweene *Henry* the younger, and *Henry*, Dukes of *Saxonie* and *Austrich*, with a populous armie marcheth into *Lombardy*, now by the long absence of the Emperours, growne confident in ability of resistance, by projecting many infallible signes of insolencie and rebellion. By the way, he destroyeth the camp of the *Millanois*, *Rosatum*, *Gailarda*, *Treca* and *Gaira*, and setteth the citie of *Ast* on fire: *Derthona* most strongly fortified by art and nature, hee taketh by force: and from thence remouing his troops through *Romania* and *Tuscanie*, hee passeth as farre as *Sutrium*.

Naucl. vbi supra.
Raonicus li. 3.

In these times the Romane sea stood incumbred with most dangerous contentions. *William* King of *Sicil*, who succeeded *Roger* (the same that we spake of in the life of *Conrade*) had taken from *Hadrian* the fourth, by birth an English man, the suburbs of *Beneuent*, *Ceperanùm* and *Bacùm* in *Campania*.

Moreouer, the Romanes by the instigation of *Arnold* of *Brixia*, redemanding their lost liberties in chusing

ſing their ſenate for the gouernment of their Citie, maintained the contention ſo farre forth againſt *Hadrian*, that as, after his election, hee made his progreſſe towards the *Lateran* to be conſecrated, the people meeting the Cardinal of Saint *Pudentiana* in the *via ſancta* taking his way towards the Court, twice wounded him.

At this outrage *Pope Hadrian* grew out of all patience, accurſeth the King, releaſeth his ſubiects of their oath of allegiance, & the eaſier to draw them into rebellion, leaueth them at libertie.

The Romans ſped no better, vntill vpon alteration of their humours, they baniſhed *Arnold* out of the Citie, and renouncing their Conſular prerogatiues, diueſted the abſolute gouernment of the place vpon the diſcretion of his Holineſſe.

Who now hearing that *Frederic* was vpon his way towards *Rome*, the *Pope* with his Cardinals, neither for loue nor in honour, but to mediate reuenge againſt the Romans and *Roger*, goe forth to ſalute him. *Frederic* reioyſing at the approach of his Holineſſe, receaueth him with wonderfull deuotion and maieſtie; holdeth his left ſtirrope as hee alighteth from horſe-back, & ſo conducteth him to the Imperial pauilion. Could more reuerence be deuiſed to be done by an Emperor to a *Pope?* when Chriſt came to *Ieruſalem* vpon Palme Sonday, did *Herod* or *Pilat* ſo obſerue him? or did *Nero* ſo ſalute *Peter* at his firſt comming to *Rome?*

Funcius li. 10. Chro. Barnus de vitis Pontif.

Well, theſe ſo great perſonages being arriued at the emperiall pauilion; The Biſhop of *Bamberg* in the name of the Emperor in the exordiū of his oration, began to diſcourſe, with what earneſtnes of affection his

Helmold. in the Cro. of Sclauony ca. 81.

Maieſtie had deſired this long expected conference with his Holineſſe. *And God be bleſſed* (quoth he) *that he now is become maſter of his deſires. Humbly and ſubmiſſiuely he requeſteth your Holineſſe, that according to the accuſtomed maner, by the Inauguration of the Imperiall diadem, you would declare him chiefe Prince and defender of the Catholique Common-weale.* And herewithall the Biſhop concludeth honeſtly, and elegantly, with the reaſons and cauſes, which could not but inable him moſt worthy of ſo reaſonable, ſo iuſt, and ſo Chriſtian-like a confirmation.

The Biſhop hauing ended his Oration, the *Pope* commendeth the ſpeach; but withall replieth; That the contents thereof, and the matter in hand were of farre different arguments. *For albeit* (quoth hee) *that the matter whereof I meane to ſpeake of, be triuial & paſſable; yet can it not be denied, but that there is cauſe of feare, that hee, who becommeth negligent in ſmall matters, will proue more negligent in greater.*

At this, the company rowſing their attentions, and wondring what offence his Holineſſe ſhould intimate; he goeth on; ſaying, *As I alighted from my horſe, he held the left ſtirrope of my Saddle: and whether he did it in mockage of vs, or vpon ſome other like fantaſie, wee can not gueſſe, for ſurely if he meant to haue honoured vs, he knew that the right ſtirrope, and that with the right hand, ought to haue beene holden.*

Cæſar being nothing moued with this baſe prattle of the Biſhop, ſmiled and replied; *That he had not been brought vp to hold a ſtirrope: you (moſt Holy father,* quoth he) *are the firſt vnto whom we haue vouchſafed this office:* And by and by after his oriſons, forgetting his patience

ence; *I would know* (ſaith he) *whether this office be to be done of dutie, or of good-will. If of good-will, who would finde fault at an eſcape or ouerſight? If of dutie, then wee thinke amongſt friends there is ſmall difference, on which ſide the partie that meaneth to honour his friend, approacheth.* Thus bandying a few bitter words, they brake company, but not without ſtomaking.

But the Emperour being a moſt prudent Prince, diſſembling what he had heard, and ſeene to proceede from the helliſh heart of this proud prelate, the next day following re-inuiteth the Biſhop to a ſecond conference. The Biſhop approcheth, the Emperour maketh ſpeed to meet him; and by his former ouerſight, being now become a better Prentize in his occupation, *layeth hold on the right ſtirrope*, and ſo leadeth his Holineſſe into his pauilion.

Being ſet, thus *Hadrian* thundereth: *Thine auncestors* (ſaith he) *Princes of the auncient world*, who made *their holy repaire vnto this ſea to receiue the crown at our hands, were accuſtomed to manifeſt their loues towards vs, by ſome notable emolument beſtowed vpon S.* Peters *chaire; thinking it their duties to preuent vs, that ſo they might call the world to witneſſe, that they obtained our benediction and their inauguration with an eminent gratuitie.* So *Charles*, after he had tamed the *Lombards*: So *Otho*, after he had ſubdued the *Beringarij*; And ſo *Lotharius*, after he had repreſſed the *Normanes*, *merited* the Imperiall diadem.

Barnes in vita Hadriani, ex Johan. de Cremona.

In like manner, Let your Serenity, reſtore vnto vs and the Church, *Apulia* an appendancie of the Romiſh ſea, now arrogated by the *Normanes*, and then ſhall you, with our very good will, obtaine as much as appertaineth vnto our loues to performe.

Vpon the reading of this Hiſtorie, can any man call this Prelat *ſervum ſeruorum*, who aſhamed not to exact from ſo great an Emperour, his Lord and Maſter, as from a baſe and mercinarie ſouldier, the laborious toiles, and the extreame expence of warfare *gratis*? Are conqueſts of Kingdomes, ſurrendring of Prouinces, and ſuch like paſſages (let any man tell me) thoſe *ſpiritualia*, whereof our moderne Papiſts doe hold the Pope capable?

When the Nobility ſaw no remedie, but *Hadrians* hand was as hard as *Pharaos* heart, ſo that it were folly to expect a Coronation, vntil at their proper coſts and charges they had reſtored to the Apoſtaticall ſea, *Apulia* (in truth an appendancie of the Imperiall right) from *William* King of *Sicil*; they thought it fitteſt to content his holineſſe with this ouerture; That *ſithence their preſent forces were waſted through continuall labour and indefatigable iourneyes, that* Cæſar *hauing leuied a new armie in* Germanie, *would returne, and accompliſh his expectation*. The Biſhop flaming what with indignation againſt *William*, & almoſt halfe dead to heare, that againſt his will hee muſt *volens nolens* giue him time of breathing and re-inforcement, ſhewing a countenance as if he liked well of their excuſes, allowed thereof, and ſo diſmiſſed them with promiſe that hee would ſet the crowne vpon *Fredericks* head.

Friſing. li. 2. cap. 21.

Theſe buſineſſes thus diſpatched; the Emperour with the Biſhop departeth from *Sutrium*, and iourneieth towards *Rome*. Mid way certaine Romane Orators, as full ſwolne with pride, as their Maſter with diſdaine, accourt him with this rude welcom: *For their theame they begin to extoll, euen aboue the skies, the antiquitie of their*

their Commonwealth: At concluſion they fall in glorious termes to intimate, *That of mere good will the Roman people had called Frederick out of* Germany *ouer the Alps, firſt to create him a citizen, and afterwards a Prince of* Rome: but with this per-cloſſe; *That the Romans* ſtood ready to receiue him; vpon condition; *That hee ſhould confirme the fundamental lawes of the City: That hee ſhould beſtow vpon the Romans who were to bid God ſaue him, in the Capitol, fiue thouſand pound of gold: That he ſhold defend the commonwealth from iniuries, euen to the hazard of his own life: And finally, that he ſhould confirme all theſe capitulations with an oth, and thereto ſet his hand.*

If the Pope can not haue Apulia preſently, he muſt haue gold without excuſe.

Frederick beeing beyond meane inraged at theſe their mad and arrogant motions, roundly taketh them vp for their follies in a moſt pithy oration: and telleth them, *That the Empire deſcended vpon him, not by any the leaſt well-wiſh of the Romanes, but by the meer vertue of the Germanes.* And perceiuing their knauery, that vnder pretext of theſe *demands*, they meant to gull him of mony; he told them in plaine termes: *That he came not into Italie, to bring it in, but to carrie it out.* With which anſwer when theſe impudent ſhauelings were not ſatiſfied, but ſtill vrged the Articles, his Maieſty diſgracefully commanded them to depart.

And perceiuing that their comming vnto him was but to put ſom trick vpõ him, he cauſed his men of war to fortifie the Church of *S. Peter* and the baſtile of *Leo.* The day following he entred *Rome*, the people following him with great applauſe and being honorably accompanied, was crowned and bleſſed. 4. Calend. Iulij. in the fourth yere of his raigne.

The Emperor being about his Coronation in the

Church of *S.Peter*, the Romanes ſtomacking the buſineſſe, and betaking them to their armes, kept the gates of the City ſhut, vnder colour, that the Emperour ſhould bring in no forces to the preiudice of the Citie. And perceiuing that *Fredericks* troopes had pitched their tents in the *Neronean medowes*, through the gate of *Hadrian* they breake out into the *Vatican*, to preuent *Cæſars* ſouldiers from entring thereinto.

Cæſars ſouldiers made ſtrong reſiſtance, and driuing the inraged people from the *Vatican* into the City, they ſlew about one thouſand, and tooke ſixty priſoners: whom, the ceremonies being ended, at requeſt of the Pope, the Emperor diſmiſſed in ſafety, and prouided for his returne into *Germanie*.

But before his departure, it is reported, that ſuch a like buſineſſe happened betweene him and the Pope, which I thinke not fit here to be pretermitted.

Innocent the ſecond, he whom a little before *Lotharius* had reſtored vnto the Papacie, had cauſed to be painted in a Table, the Pope (as it were) ſitting in his chaire, and the Emperor with his hands held vp together, receiuing the Imperiall Diadem: where vnder were written the foreſaid two verſes, *Rex venit ante fores &c.* When this picture with the inſcription, was ſhewed vnto his Maieſty, it did greatly diſpleaſe him, and caſting foorth ſome obiurgatorie word, he inſtanced the Pope to take it away: which hee promiſed to doe, leaſt ſo friuolous a ſpectacle might giue matter of diſcontent to many worthy perſonages then reſiding in the City.

Cronicon Herſaugienſe in vita Hartuigi abbatis. Radeuicus li 3. num. 3. & 10.

Frederick is departed: and *Emanuel* Emperour of *Conſtantinople* vnderſtanding with what deſire of reuenge

uenge the Popes ſtomack burned againſt *William* King of *Apulia*, by *Paleologus* his Orator and Embaſſador, he offereth vnto the Pope his voluntary ſeruice; and withall, to expulſe *William* out of *Italie*; vpon condition, If the buſineſſe tooke expected iſſue, that then, according to the treaty; the *Grecian* ſhould inioy three maritime cities in *Apulia*. Doubt not, I beſeech you, but that he who had already depriued *William* of *Apulia*, for contemning ſuch religious wares, as are Popiſh Bulls and Curſes, did not ſtraine much curteſie to accept of the Articles. Whereof *William* taking notice, and withall ſomewhat fearefull, by his Embaſſadours moueth his holineſſe to hearken vnto peace; promiſing not only to reſtore vnto the Church, whatſoeuer he had taken away, but alſo that he would adde ſomewhat of his owne thereto: Moreouer, that hee would thenceforth containe the Romans, rebells to the Church, in their due obedience.

Theſe were honourable conditions, but that the Pope ſhould not accept therof, the Cardinalls diſſwaded him, like true men of armes, hoping to reape more crownes by war, then by peace. Whereupon, warre is proclaimed againſt *William*. Hee leuieth an army throughout *Sicily*, landeth in *Apulia*, waſteth the country by sword and fire, and finally routeth *Emanuel*, who had pitched his Tents not far from *Brunduſium* vnto *Beneuent*, where at that time the Pope with his Cardinalls reſided, he gaue ſuch ſharpe aſſaults, that in deſpaire of their liues, he inforced them to ſue for peace.

William accordeth, and is receiued into fauour, and proclaimed king of both kingdoms, on this ſide and beyond *Pharum*; but vpon oath, that from thenceforth he

hee would neuer againe infeſt the territories of the Church.

Thus, as you heare, matters being ignominiouſly compounded, the Pope riding in viſitation through the territories of the *Caſinates, Marſi, Reatini, Narnienſes and Tudertini*, at laſt ariueth at *Ouieta*; and there is giuen to vnderſtand, that Rome is in combuſtion, the Conſuls doing their vtmoſt to reſtore the City to it former liberty.

Hereupon groundeth He his deadly hatred againſt *Frederick*, moſt greeuouſly complaining, that being in diſtreſſe between the ſwords of the Romans and *William*, that contrary vnto his ſuperabundant promiſes, againſt all right, he had forſaken him; yea, that he was now ſo incircled with perils, that he could not liue in ſecurity at Rome: As if the Emperor were a veſſell eſpecially choſen rather to patronize the Popes wilfull errors and ouerſights, then to defend the innocency of the Chriſtian flock committed vnto his tutelage.

But *Fredericke* taking in euill part many the Popes actions, but eſpecially *the alienation of Apulia, being an appendancy of the imperiall dignity, without his conſent or knowledge*: As alſo calling to remembrance, *That the Pope had wreſted from the late Emperors the right of Inueſtiture of Prelates: That by his miniſters hee had impoueriſhed the ſubiects of the Empire, and by their ſubtill diſperſions of treaſonable practiſes, had done what in them lay, to raiſe ſedition throughout the Empire*: Vpon theſe grounds, I ſay, the Emperours Maieſty now thought it high time to put remedy vnto theſe violent intruſions vpon the regalties of the Empire.

Naucl. Gen. 39.

Hereupon hee exacteth an oth of fidelity of all the Biſhops

Biſhops of *Germany*; The Popes Legats(ſuch as were not called in by his good pleaſure)he commandeth to depart the Teutonick kingdom: prohibiteth his people either to appeale or trauaile to the Romiſh Court and in his mandats cauſeth his name to be inſerted before the Popes.

Vpon the proclaiming of this Inhibition,it happened, that a certaine Biſhop in his way from Rome, (whether as a contemner of the Emperors edict, or vpon any other cauſe,I know not)was taken priſoner, and committed to ward. *Radeuicus li. 3. ca.9.10.*

Now hath the Pope found an occaſion by the taking of this Biſhop,to fulminate his long-conceiued diſpleaſure againſt the Emperor, and by a proud Embaſſie,ſeemeth only to be agreeued,that the Biſhop is not deliuered from Captiuity; but withall interlaceth, both in his letters,as alſo in the ſpeeches of his legat, many blundering *Items*; which did abundantly inſinuate in what manner he deemed the Emperor to be obliged vnto him.

For by his letters he wiſht him to re-conſider, how from him he had receiued the confirmation of the Imperiall crowne; and yet did his Holineſſe nothing repent it, had the fauours which he had beſtowed vpon him,been far more beneficiall.

Vpon the reading of which letters, the nobility falling into diſcontent;one of the Legats roſe vp, and reſolutely tooke vpon him to broach: *That the Romane Empire was transferred from the Grecians to the Almans, not to be called Emperor,but King of the Teutonicks,vntil he were confirmed by the Apoſtolique ſea: Before conſecration he was a King,after an Emperor:Whence then hath hee*

his Empire, if not of the Pope? By the election of the nobility he hath the name of a king, by conſecration of the Pope, the ſtile of an Emperor, and Cæſar Auguſtus, *Ergo per Papam imperat. Search Antiquity:* Zachary *inobled* Charles *and gaue him the ſirname of Great,* that he mought be Emperor: and ordained that euer after the Teutonic King ſhould bee Emperor, *and Champion of the Apoſtolique Sea: That Apulia, by him ſhould be pacified, and reſtored to the Church, being in truth holden of* S. Peter, *and not of the Empire.*

Rome is the ſeat of the Pope, Aquis *in* Arden *is the Emperors: Whatſoeuer the Emperor poſſeſſeth, he holdeth it whollie of the Pope. As* Zachary *transferred the Empire from the Greeks to the Teutonics: So may the Pope retransfer it from the Almans to the Grecians. Behold, it is in his power to giue it to whom he pleaſeth, beeing onlie conſtituted of God ouer Kingdoms and people; to deſtroie, to pull downe, to build and to plant. In concluſion, he termeth the Germans cowards, for that they could neither expulſe* Roger *out of* Italy, *nor would at anie time bring the* Danes *and* Friſlanders *to ſubiection.* Vpon the hearing of theſe ſcandalous exorbitations, both the Emperor conceiued a iuſt diſpleaſure, and the whole nobility ſo ſtormed thereat, that *Otto* of *Wittelſpach* drawing the ſword, which he accuſtomed to beare before the Emperor, had ſhethed it in the body of the Legat, had not the Emperor thruſt betweene them. Of theſe abuſes the Emperor euer after made vſe, pretending that the cauſe of his ſo and ſo doing, took originall from theſe ſaucy and malepert ſpeeches of the Popiſh miniſters. And thereupon cauſing the Legats to be ſafe conducted to their lodging, at break of day hee commaunded them

Radeuicus vbi ſupra.

them to be packing; with especiall caution, that they should not rome hether and thether vpon the liuings of the Bishops & Abbots: but that they should keepe the high way towards the Citie, without declining therefrom either to the right hand or the left. The especiall reason was, that according vnto the accustomed dog-trick of the Romanists, they should not disperse their conceiued poyson of discontent ouer all the Churches and Parishes of the Kingdome; neither strip the Altars, nor carie away the vtensils of Gods house, nor fliece the crosses.

And because that no man should imagine, that this intimation was inflicted aboue desert, nor any commotion should thereupon arise, *Cæsar* by the councell of the wise men of his Kingdome, sendeth his letters through the whole Empire, shewing the tenour of the cause. And thereunto adioyneth his most passionate complaints vpon *the diminution of the honor of the Empire:* with a declaration, That *by the election of the Princes, vnder God onely, the Empire had deuolued to him and his successours.* Against which, if any man presumed to affirme that the Emperour ought to hold of the Pope in fee, he was to suffer punishment, as a person guilty of an vntruth, & one that maintained an opinion contrarie to the diuine institution, & the doctrine of Saint *Peter.*

The *Legats* ariue at *Rome*, where in most calumnious manner aggrauating their wrongs and iniuries, in the presence of *Hadrian*, by adding flame to fire, they so incense his holinesse already transported with furie and reuenge, but to thinke that *Frederick* had done, what his aunce stors durst not haue dreamed of (for of

which of the Romane Emperours is it read of, that euer interdicted the Romanists Germanie.) That forthwith hee addresseth his minitory letters vnto *Cæsar*: wherein most bitterly and papally hee expostulateth with his Maiestie of those and all fore-passed greeuances. The transcript whereof because they are worth the reading and animaduersion, for the benefit of the Reader I will here insert.

Nauel fo. 761. Gen. 39.

Adrian Bishop, *seruant vnto the seruants of God, sendeth greeting and apostolicall benediction vnto* Frederick *Emperour of Romanes. As the Diuine Law assureth long life vnto those, that render due obedience vnto their parents: So, vnto him that disobeyeth his father or mother, it inflicteth the sentence of death, and damnation. The voice of veritie doth teach vs, that euery soule that exalteth it selfe, shall be humbled. Whereupon (beloued sonne in the Lord) according vnto your wisedome, we are not a little amazed, that you shew not that measure of reuerence towards Saint* Peter, *and the* Romane Church, *as you are bound to doe. In your letters dated to our Holinesse, you insert* your stile *before* Ours. *Wherein, you incurre the scandall of* presumption, *I will not say, of* Arrogancie. *As concerning your fealtie auowed and sworne to* Saint Peter and vs, *how is it kept, when you require Homage, exact fealty, and hold the holy hands of those betweene yours, who are duly dedicated to God, being his most glorious children,* viz. *the Bishops, shewing your selfe manifestly rebellious vnto vs, in denying our Cardinals (directed vnto you from our side) not onelie entrance into the Churches, but also into the Cities of your Kingdome? Repent, repent therefore wee aduise you, least that in seeking to deserue a Crowne and coronation, at our hands, in affecting things vngranted, you lose not what*

is

is alreadie granted. We tender your nobleneſſe.

What inference of humility or apoſtolicall lenitie appeareth (I beſeech you) in theſe letters? nay, rather may not a good Chriſtian without offence terme ſuch a pride to be truly Luciferian, that taketh ſo great a ſcorne to haue the papall ſtile placed behinde the Imperiall, as if other Emperours in their letters to His Holineſſe, had not before times done the like? See 97. *dist.c.victor. & 63.distinct.c.tibi.*

After the receite of theſe blunt and proud-papall mandats, the Emperour according to his excellent ſufficiencie in Chriſtian ſapience, requiteth him; and as the prouerb is, driuing out one naile with another, he payeth his holineſſe home in this manner.

Frederick *by the grace of God Emperour of Romanes alwaies* Auguſtus, *vnto* Adrian *Biſhop of the Catholique congregation. Whatſoeuer* Ieſus *began to doe and to teach, in all things ought wee that to follow. The Law of Iuſtice diſtributeth vnto euerie man his owne. Wee derogate not from our parents, as long as in this Kingdome we vouchſafe them due Honour, from whom,* viz. *our progenitours, wee haue receaued the dignitie and Crowne of the Kingdome. I pray you in the time of* Cõſtantine *was* Silueſter *known to haue anie intereſt in the Regalties? By his Pietie, the Church obtained libertie and peace: and what euer* iura regalia *your Papacie can claime, they accrewed vnto you by the bountie of Princes. Turne ouer the Cronicles, and if you pleaſe not to beliue what I write, there ſhall you finde as much as we affirme. What ſhould then let vs, that we ſhould not exact homage and oathes of allegeance from them, which are Gods by adoption, yet hold of vs in regaltie: ſithence that He, who was ours and your Maſter (taking nothing from* Nau.fo.792.

the King, but distributing all his goods indifferentlie amongst all persons; paying tribute to Cæsar *for himselfe and* Peter, *and leauing the example behinde him for you to follow) hath warranted the president, by saying;* Learne you of me, for I am meeke and humble of heart. *Wherefore, let them either resigne their regalties,* viz. *their temporalities; or in the name of God, if they shall iudge them profitable, let them giue vnto God the things that are Gods, and vnto* Cæsar, *what belongeth to* Cæsar. *The reason wherefore we interdicted your Cardinals, the Churches, and forbad them our Cities, was because we finde them not Preachers, but robbers: not peace-makers but money masters: not conuerters of the people, but heapers of insatiable treasure. Yet, when we shall finde them, such as the Church ordaineth them; messengers of peace, lights to their Countrie, and impartiall assistants to the cause of the Humble, then will we not deferre to relieue them with competent stipends, and necessarie prouisions: meane time you wrong humilitie, the Princesse of vertues, and mightilie scandalize your submissiuenesse, by terrifying the consciences of secular persons, with positions wholy impertinent to religion. Let your fatherhood therefore take heede, lest while you motion points of such nature (whereof we make light account) that you offend not those, who would otherwise euen in hast open their eares as willingly vnto the words of your mouth, as vnto a presage of a ioyfull accident. These things we can not but aunswere, sithence so detestable a beast of pride hath crept into S.* Peters *Chaire. Fare you well alwaies, and God at all times make you carefull for the peace of the Church.*

What humane spirit can scandalize these the Emperors letters? What scruple of equity, of piety, or vprightnesse can any man say is wanting in them? Who

can

can iuſtifie, that hee wrote otherwiſe then became a true and a Chriſtian Emperor? He but retorted the Biſhops pride; he maintained but the honor of the Empire; he ſought but reaſon, and that was, Chriſtian humility and modeſty in Chriſtian Churchmen; which in thoſe times, as the world then complained, was not to be found in that ſort of people.

What followed? Peace I warrant you: nothing leſſe. For the Pope not contented that by letters hee had bandied with the Emperor, but writing vnto all the Archbiſhops and Biſhops of Germany, he punctually noteth downe the cariage of the cauſe, and aggreuateth the indignity of the fact: Admoniſhing them, that ſithence the action concerned the whole body of the Church (for they will make vs beleeue that without their intruſions all Chriſtendom muſt periſh) that they ſhould corroborate themſelues, as a wall of braſſe to ſuſtaine the declining eſtate of the houſe of God. And that they ſhould not only find meanes to reduce the Emperor into the right way, but alſo take open and condigne ſatisfaction vpon *Rainold* the Emperors Chancelor, and *Otto* Earle of *Wittelſpach*, who forſooth had belched out infinit blaſphemies againſt the Apoſtolike Legats and the Church of Rome: *That as the inciuilitie of their ſpeech had offended the eares of manie, ſo their penances might be an example to reſtore as manie againe into the right path of obedience.*

The Epiſtle is to be ſeen in Radeuicus li. 3. c. 15.

Notable policy cunning and hypocriſie.

But for that (as certaine of the writers of that age doe teſtifie) the then Biſhops were not ſo eagerly addicted to maintaine the Popes vſurpations, as many of them are now, they conuocated a Councell, and thus wrote backe vnto his fatherhood: *That they were not*

Iacob. Spigelius in annotat. ad Ligurinum Gunthori. li. 6. fol. 143.

not onlie wonderfullie agreeued at theſe abuſes; but alſo Arnold *of* Mogunce *and* Euerard *of* Saltzburge *by their priuate letters admoniſhed all Roman Prieſts, Cardinals, Archbiſhops, Biſhops and Maſſemungers, to giue ouer their ſaucineſſe, their pride, their auarice, their perfidie, and all other enormities, by which they robbed the poore, and diſturbed the peace of the Empire. Finallie they humblie beſought them, that they would put their helping hands to worke* Adrian *to obſerue peace: vndertaking for the Emperor that he ſhould do nothing, but what ſtood with religion, reaſon and equitie.*

Epiſt. extat li. 3. ca. 16. in Radeuicus. Auent. li. 6. Annal. Boior. fo. 636.

Sure theſe were bitter pills for *Hadrians* ſtomach: But what remedy? Popes, as they are curſefull, ſo are they politique, and beeing well skild in ſpeculation, they know by the Planets, when it is high time to hold a candle before the Diuell. He that now reigneth is not *Henrie* the fourth, but *Frederick* the firſt: who is now preparing for *Italie*; and hauing ſent his honorable Embaſſadors, *Rainold* his Chauncellor and *Otto* of *Wittelsbach*, before to aſſemble a conuocation of the Princes and Biſhops of Italy, prepareth his way in potent and Princelike manner, and meaneth himſelfe in ſhort time to ſit in perſon in Councell amongſt them.

Now is it time to fly vnto the fox his caſe; a necromantique ſpell hath informed vs, that the Lions skin will nothing preuaile vs: Humble letters are diſpatched towards *Auguſta* to lenifie the Emperours diſpleaſure; and *Henrie* Duke of *Saxonie* and *Bauaria* with *Otho* the Friſon; made interceſſors to reconciliation.

Nau. Gen. 39. Auenti. loco præ allegato. Rade. li. 3. cap. 17.

No long time after, *Hadrian* betakes himſelfe againe to his perſpectiue, where obſeruing that the Cities of Italy (*Crema* being hardly beſieged by *Frederick*) had inter-

interpriſed a conſpiracie to re-uindicate their liberty, the Pope hauing vtterly forgotten his yeſterdaies reconciliation, traiterouſly adhereth to the faction and animateth the conſpiracie vpon theſe conditions. Firſt *That neither partie ſhould accept of peace without the good leau of the other*. Secondly, *That if the Biſhop chanced to die, that none but one of the ſame faction, ſhould be created in his ſtead.*

And then to giue the better countenance to the rebellion, for an infinit Maſſe of mony hee is corrupted to accurſe his Maieſty. So ſaith mine Author; but in theſe daies, I am of opinion, that *malice* is as powerfull in a Papiſts breaſt as *corruption* in the Papall Court. *Nau. Gen. 39. ex Joh. Cremonenſi.*

But our beſt and great God, who by the mouth of his ſeruant *Dauid*, ſeemeth punctually to cry out againſt theſe hired Excommunications of Popes: *They curſe, and thou bleſſeſt: Let thoſe that riſe againſt me be confounded, but thy ſeruant ſhall reioice*: This good God, I ſay, inuerted this execrable maledict vpon the Popes own head, and miraculouſly confounded the man, to the terror of all poſterity. For being at *Anagnia*, the place where hee had excommunicated *Fredericke*, it chanced that as he walked abroad amongſt his familiars to take the aire, as hee was drinking at a certaine fountaine, a flye flying into his throat, ſtucke ſo faſt therein, that no phyſicall experiment could giue him eaſe; and ſo he died miſerably choked.

Would it not amaſe any humane fleſh, to ſee ſo huge a gyant in the middeſt of his armed and rebellious battalions, but euen now ſcorning the Emperor and all his forces, preſently to lye dead with the ſtroke of a flie? Or is there any Prieſt amongſt them ſo irreli-

gious,that dare but imagine, that this ſtroke proceeded from caſualty, and not from the finger of God, conſidering that that throat which had but now belched out ſo iniuſt an execration againſt a moſt godlie and innocent Emperor,was alſo appointed the inſtrument to confound his ſpirits? Yea this vnſhamed rabble,being nothing terrified with ſo miraculous a preſident,could by no meanes be diuerted from their intended conſpiracy.For perceiuing that they could not haue their wills vpon his Maieſty by force , beeing ſtrōg in ſoldiery,Lord of Italy,& in diuers ouerthrows putting the Millanois to the worſe;they made their recourſe to villany,and by treaſon laid wait for his life.

To the execution whereof, by great rewards they cunningly corrupt a fellow of a ſtrong body vnder the habit of a foole or ieſter to goe vnto *Landa* , the place where the Emperor then reſided, and there vpon oportunity to offer him violence.

Radeuicus li.4. ca.40.& 4. Guntherus in Ligurinoli 9. circa finem.

The traitor wholly animated by their large promiſes,reſolueth vpon the villany,goeth to *Landa*;entreth the Campe,and by ieſts and fooleries maketh his acceſſe euer into the Emperors pauilion : His Tent at that time was pitched vpon the very banke of the riuer Abdua,ſo ſteep and ſliding,that if any thing fell thereinto,the ſwift courſe of the ſtreame would forth with carry it away with violence.Which the foole-villaine obſeruing to be a fit proiect for his intended treaſon, aſſaulteth the Emperor (according to his cuſtome going alone vnto his prayers by day dawning) and by ſtruggling and tugging laboureth to carry him to the foreſaid ſteep place. The Emperor plaieth the man,ſo that both parties being intangled with the tackling of the

the tents, fell to ground; by which time the Gentlemen of the chamber being awaked, by the calling of the Emperour, runne to ſuccour, and taking the villaine, they threw him headlong into the ſame place of the riuer. This ſtratagem being fruſtrated, they fall to a ſecond, but will be ſeene in neither.

They ſuborne eight creatures of their owne with plenty of crownes, to ſet *Landa* on fire. One of them miſtaking the night, and laying his traines, was taken by the watch, with an other of his companions a counterfeit Monke, and both hanged.

Being alſo deceiued in the execution of this Gunpowder plot, they fall to a third; and ſend forth a certaine *Mountebank*, reſolute to death, accompanied with ſome ſuch fellowes as himſelfe, to ſet to ſale in the Emperours Campe poyſoned rings, bridels and ſpurres, ſo deadly inuenomed, that if the Emperour had touched any of them, he had ſurely periſhed. But his Maieſtie being fore-warned, cauſeth this Marchant to be watched and apprehended: Commandeth him to be examined, but finding that he ſcorned both queſtions and torments, without more a-doe hee ſendeth him to the gallowes.

Hadrian (as we told you) being choakt with a Fly, the Cardinals begin to wrangle about the choiſe of a ſucceſſor. For two and twentie, being the Emperours aduerſaries, would haue choſen *Roland of Siena*, one of thoſe Cardinals; whom a little before *Hadrian* had ſent *Legat* vnto *Frederick*, and *Frederick* had baniſhed *Germanie*: But nine others adhearing to the Emperor, by the ſuffrages of the *Prefect* of the Citie, and the people, created *Octauianus* a Romane borne, Prieſt and

Ab. vrſperg. Plat. in vita Alex. Nauc. Gen. 39. Rad. li. 4. ca. 54.

Cardinall of *Saint Clements*, and ſtiled him *Victor*.

But theſe raſh elections being likely to foſter infinite diſſenſions, It was agreed betweene the Electors of both parties; that neither of the Elected ſhould be confirmed, before it was agreed vpon at all hands who ſhould be *the Man*, and the contention quite ſilenced.

But the *Rolanders* being the *maior* partie, falſifying their oathes, proclaimed the election of *Roland*, and new chriſtned him *Alexander* the third. From hence aroſe a mighty Schiſme. *Victor* remaineth at *Rome*, *Alexander* flieth vnto *William* King of *Sicil*, and there the twelfth day after his election, is confirmed Pope. And to preuent, that this diſſenſion ſhould not draw with it the finall deſtruction of the Church of *Rome*, by his legats, hee intreateth the Emperour *Frederick*, that by interpoſition of his authority, he would vouchſafe to put end to the Schiſme. The doubtfull iſſue of a new Schiſme much troubled *Frederick*; wherefore, finding that both the *Elettos*, being orderly conſecrated, he could not lawfully determine the ſtrife, without the authority of a Councell; after the examples of *Conſtantine*, *Theodoſius*, *Iuſtinian* and other Emperors: (knowing that the ſummoning thereof appertained vnto him) he nominateth the day of the Aſſembly to be held at *Papia*; and thether he warneth both the Biſhops to appeare, promiſing alſo to be there in perſon to take cognizance of eithers greeuances.

Behold the Emperiall iuriſdiction ſolicited. Radeu. li. 4. cap. 58.

After proclamation whereof, *Alexander* goeth to *Anagnia*, whereat the Emperour being angrie for his contempt, deſpatcheth his letters vnto him by *Daniel* and *Herman*, Biſhops of *Prage* and *Verdim*, citing him by

Generall councels ominous to Popes.

by the name of Biſhop, and not of Pope, to appeare at the Councell.

Alexander reiecteth *Cæſars* Ambaſſadors moſt contumeliouſly, and in very arrogant termes telleth them plainly, *That the Romane Biſhop was to bee iudged by no mortall creature.* They doing no good vpon *Alexander*, retire towards *Octauianus*, him they ſalute as Pope, and accompany to *Papia*. There the Councell being aſſembled, and the cauſe vpon ſufficient witneſſe through all circumſtances iudicially examined, *Victor* is declared Pope, and ſo acknowledged by all the German Biſhops by the commandement of *Cæſar*.

C. Patet. & cauemo 9. q. 3. Item 17. q. 4. ca. Si quis ſuadente in extremo. Item diſt. 40. c. ſi papa. Naucl. gen. 39.

At which pretended iniury *Alexander* being mooued, he accurſeth *Fredericke* and *Victor:* and forthwith dateth his letters of iuſtification vnto all Chriſtians Kings and Potentates; *That what He did, was done with equitie and good reaſon.* But at his returne into the City, finding many new vpſtart aduerſaries, openly oppoſing againſt him, he went to *Tarracine*: And there going on ſhipbord, purpoſely there layde for him by *William* of *Sicil*, hee retyred into *France*: where by the good leaue of *Philip*, aſſembling a Conuenticle in *Claremount*, in all haſt he proclaimeth his curſe againſt the Emperor and the Antipope.

His Maieſty, albeit he foreſaw the miſchiefes likely to ariſe vpon this diſſenſion; notwithſtanding he continueth his ſiege againſt *Millan*, vntill enforced by famin and wants, the inhabitants voluntarily ſurrendred the City at diſcretion, This diſpatched, he ſent his Ambaſſadors to the French King, to deſire that he would call a Councel at *Didion*: Whether if hee would bring his Pope, then would his Maieſty alſo promiſe to bee

there,and with him,to bring his Pope alſo. What an-
Nauc.gen.39. ſwer theſe Ambaſſadours receiued , it is not truely known:but ſo much is recorded to memory, that the Earle of Blois gaue the Emperor his faith, that the King his maſter would not faile to be there. Whereupon,at the prefixed day the Emperor with *Victor* kept promiſe,and pitched his tents neere *Didion* : Thither came alſo *Henrie* the ſecond,and *William* kings of *England* and *Scotland*.

But *Alexander* could not only not be perſwaded to come;vnder pretence, that the aſſembly was congregated by the Emperor,and not by him: but he alſo ſo wrought with *Philip*,that he came vnto the place indeed,but before the Emperor ; where waſhing his hands in the riuer hard by,forthwith by the voice of an Herauld he ſummoned his Maieſty(as if herein he had ſatisfied his oath)and ſo departed. Wherewith the Emperor,the Kings, & the other Princes being much agreeued,wiſhed *Victor* to returne to his Popedome, and they retired euery man to his own home.

Victor ariued at *Lucca* in *Hetruria*, fell ſicke, and died : in whoſe place ſucceeded *Guido* Biſhop of *Cremona*,called *Paſchal* the third. And vnto him at *Goſlaria* the Emperor,and all the Princes and Biſhops of *Germany* did their reuerence.
Nauel.vbi ſupra.

Alexander who was yet in *France*,to keep Rome in obedience, conſtituted *Iohn* the Cardinall his Vicar generall, and regranted liberty to the Romanes to chuſe their owne Conſuls; prouided that they were ſuch as were fauorites of his faction. Then departeth he from *France* into *Sicil*, foorthwith returneth to Rome,and is willingly receiued of the Romanes, and

Guido

Guido reiected. Whereupon the cities of *Italie*, incouraged by the comming of *Alexander* to hope after liberty, contrary to their oathes ſworne before vnto the Emperor, they reedified *Millan*, but lately razed and ſubuerted by *Cæſar*. Then at the inſtigation of *Alexander*, they enter into actuall rebellion; they inuade the Emperors miniſters and fauorits, ſome of whom they expell, and ſome they murder. Then vſing his further councell and aſſiſtance, they proceed to the building of a new City, called *Alexandria*, in honor of *Alexander* and contempt of *Frederick*, culling out of euery City, fifteen thouſand men for inhabitation; vnto whome they deuide the territory, and aſſigne portions whereupon to build their dwellings. *Nauc. gen. 40. Vrſpergenſ.*

Vpon intelligence of theſe rebellious combinations, *Cæſar* leuieth an armie, and prepareth for *Italie*: where inforcing certaine of the rebels to compoſition, he beſiegeth *Alexandria*; but this ſiege proued nothing honourable: for *Alexandria* being continually relieued from the intereſſed cities, defended it ſelfe valiantly. And more then that, *Henry Leo* Duke of *Bauaria* and *Saxonie*, corrupted with money contrarie to all imagination of the Emperour, neither regarding the bond of kindred, nor the memorie of fore-paſſed kindneſſes, moſt traiterouſly departed with his forces: ſo that *Frederick* finding himſelfe too weake to withſtand the Italian rebels, diſperſed his hoaſt, and with great difficultie in the habit of an Hoſtler fled into *Burgundy* by the way of *Mount Iupiter*. But *Leo* eſcaped not ſcot-free: for the Emperour hauing now recouered *Germanie*, and re-inforcing his armie, limiteth the Duke a day; appeacheth him of treaſon; and ouerthrowing his forces,

forces, depriueth him of his Lordſhips & Dukedome.

Nau gen.40. Abbas vrſpergenſis.

Some Princes fauouring *Henrie*, gaue out, that the Emperor could not condemne him, vnleſſe the ſentence had beene giuen within his owne dominions. Which *Frederick*, who before times had ſhewen himſelfe a ſeuere cenſurer in inflicting exemplary puniſhment againſt rebells and outlawes, little eſteemed; but beſtowed the Dutchy of *Noricum* vpon *Otto* of *Wittelſpach*, that of *Saxony* vpon *Bernard Anhaldin*, and the reſidue, vpon other of his ſeruants. Who being re-enforced by the aſſiſtance of their friends within the ſpace of one moneth, expulſed *Leo* almoſt out of all his liuelyhoods; which of any ſubiect of the Empire, were the greateſt and goodlieſt; inſomuch that nothing was left him, ſaue only the Dutchy of *Brunſwicke*: An excellent preſident for gentlemen to looke vnto, and to learne; that the authority of ſoueraignty lawfully warranted by Gods owne mouth, is not raſhly to bee vilified, but to be reuerenced with fidelity, obedience, and honor, and that for conſcience ſake.

And becauſe I make no queſtion, but that the review of this example, may be a motiue to bring many a raſh ſpirit into the due conſideration of authority, I will bee bold here to relate certaine other exemplary puniſhments inflicted by this Emperor vpon others of his rebellious ſubiects.

Tritemius in Cronico Hierſaug. ſub abbate volmaro. fo. 175. Nau ge.39. fol.765.

Herman Earle *Palatin* of the Rhene, and his complices, for that in his Italian abſence, hee had violated the publique peace, by raiſing armes againſt *Arnold* Archbiſhop of *Mogunce*, he compelled publiquely for ſatisfaction to lead a dog vpon the birth day of the Lord of *Wormes*.

Gualfag

Gualfag Earle of *Angleria*, and Prince of *Millan*, for that after the promulgation of the Curſe by the Pope he ſided with *Alexander*, and in his quarrell committed many inſolencies in the City, to the derogation of the honor of the Empire; hauing taken him, three daies he tied him as a dog vnder his table; whipt him with ſcurges, and at laſt in chaines ſent him into Germany. Theſe were the puniſhments of thoſe daies; the like whereof if tranſgreſſors in like caſes ſhould vndergoe in theſe times, there were no doubt, but to find greater tranquility, and better obedience to the lawes through out the Empire. But to our pupoſe.

Frederick hauing thus abated the greatneſſe of *Henrie*, leuied a new army in *Germany*, and again marcheth towards *Italie*. *Platin. in vita Alex. Nau. gen. 41. Blondus & alij.*

Variable I know, is the opinion of writers about the geſts done in *Italie* in this iourney.

Some report that he fought in ſuch great danger againſt the Millanois, that his horſe being ſlayn, himſelf had almoſt miſcaried: and that vpon the compulſatory threats of the Biſhops, he was fain to treat a peace with the Church. Others write, that by the perſwaſiõ of the Biſhop of *Brixia*, he went into the *Holy-land*, and that there, after the atchiuement of many famous victories, hee was betraied by *Alexander* to the Soldan, yet at length again reſtored to liberty by the Popes liberality. *Io. Cremonenſis. Barnus Author vitæ Frederici Germanicæ ſcriptæ.*

Albeit I know that theſe reports are heaued at by many: notwithſtãding ſithence they are vouched with the authority of ſuch authors, whoſe diligence in reporting the life of ſo worthy an Emperour, may deſeruedly bee tollerated: I am onely diſpoſed to relate them as I finde them, eſpecially, beeing ſuch as in

likelihood held correſpondencie, with the papall diſpoſition againſt Emperours, not altogether impertinent to our Argument: for beliefe, I leaue it to euery mans iudgement. Then thus at large.

Did not the Biſhops of England ſo by Henrie the fift.

Frederick being arriued at *Brixia*, *Hartmannus* Biſhop of the place, and the Emperours Secretarie, by the ſecret inſtructions of the *Pope*, dealeth with his Maieſtie rather to turne theſe armes againſt *Turks* and Indels, then againſt the moſt Holy father and the Chriſtian people. *The Holie land* (quoth hee) *which your Grandfather* Conrade *to his infinite expence recouered from the* Turks, *is now reconquered by the Egyptian* Soldan. *I beſeech your Maieſtie euen in the name and behalfe of the publique welfare, that vnto the glorious recoueric of theſe Kingdomes, you would diuert your whole cogitations. This if you pleaſe to entertaine, you may aſſure your ſelfe, that the French King will noblie aſſiſt you to expell this Sacracen.* This honeſt-ſeeming oration (ſaith the Hiſtorie) the Emperour well liked, and tranſporteth into *Turkie* this armie, firſt leuied againſt the *Pope*, and the *Italian* rebels. Taking his iourney by *Hungarie*, he commeth to *Conſtantinople*, tranſporteth his army, and taketh many cities from the *Soldan*. He inuadeth the leſſer *Armenia*, and comming to *Ieruſalem*, hee winneth the Citie, and caſteth out the *Pagans*. But whilſt the world goeth thus proſperouſly forward in the Eaſt, *Pope Alexander*, that moſt wicked Traytour, imagining it would not be ſo with him and his complices, if his Maieſtie ſhould returne ſo powrefull into *Italy*, reſolueth to ſeeke his deſtruction by villany. He cauſeth an excellent Painter to draw the protraiture of *Frederick*, and ſendeth it to the *Soldan*, with this Item; *That if he*

deſired

deſired to liue in peace, There was the Emperours counterfait; make meanes to deſtroy him. The *Soldan* hauing receaued the Breue, and the Picture, meditateth how he might gratifie the Biſhop, pleaſure himſelfe, and be reuenged on his enemie. Opportunity in the Camp, or in conflict is ſeldome, or neuer offered. But as *Cæſar* led back his troupes ſecurely from the conqueſt of *Ieruſalem*, he deuideth them into Companies, for the better commodiouſneſſe in their retreat to prouide them of neceſſaries. In *Armenia*, what by the heat of the ſunne, & the tediouſnes of the iourney (imagining that no danger could proceed frō thoſe ſolitary woods) with a few horſmen, & his Chaplin he departeth from the Army. Being a little remoued, and the horſemen commanded to depart, he prepareth to put off his garments, to waſh himſelf in the riuer, to aſſwage the heat of his body. There with his Chaplin he is taken, and throgh the woods brought priſoner to the *Soldan*. The horſmen in vain expect the returne of their Maſter, yet diligently ſcourd vp and down the country, both that and next day to heare what newes. The report goeth that he is drowned. Great is the griefe of the Camp, & for a moneths ſpace they drag for him in the riuer. But not finding him, they choſe new Captaines & depart.

The Emperor being brought before the *Soldan*, faineth that he is his Chamberlaine. The *Soldan* by the protracture knoweth him to be the Emperour, and commandeth the picture to be ſhewed, and the *Popes* letters to be read. Whereat his Maieſtie being aſtoniſhed, and perceiuing that there was no further time of denial, cōfeſſeth the truth, & asketh honorable vſage. The *Soldan* after many diſcourſes with his Maieſtie,

incloſeth him & his Chaplin in priſon, and according to his calling, entreateth him accordingly. At three moneths end, they inter-parly againe: when the *Soldan* perceiuing by conference, that *Fredericke* was an vpright man, in whom no vertue requiſite in ſo great a perſonage was wanting; admiring his wiſdom, his cariage his faith and integrity; hee fell into imagination with himſelfe, that it would be much for his honor and glory to ſet at liberty ſo great & ſo magnificent a Monarch. Whereupon he ſendeth for the Emperour, and propoſeth his conditionall liberty, viz. *That hee ſhould giue him hoſtages, and pay for his ranſome three hundred thouſand ſicles.* The Emperor anſwereth, that he is able to do neither; firſt, that he had no man there to be his pledge, and ſecondly, that his treaſure being exhauſted by this long war, he could not pay ſo exceſſiue a maſſe of mony. The *Soldan*, well knowing that he ſpake nothing but truth, deliuered him on condition; *That hee ſhould euer during his life keepe firme peace: pay one hundreth thouſand duckets, and leaue his Chaplin behinde him vntil the mony were paid.* The couenants are drawn: the Emperor prepareth for his iourney: willeth his Chaplin to be of good courage: and promiſeth him neuer to giue ouer, vntill the mony were procured, & himſelf ſafe returned into *Germany*. The *Soldan* bountifully honoreth the Emperour; prouideth for his iourney, and conducteth him to *Brixia* by the ſeruice of 34. horſe, and certaine companies of foot.

The Princes vnderſtanding of the Emperors returne, in frequent aſſemblies congratulate his ſafety. *Ceſar* requiteth his conuoy with an honorable larges, and adioyeth ſome troupes vnto them to ſafe conduct them

them to the frontiers of the Empire. Then proclaimeth he a Diet at *Norimberg*, and before all the Princes of the Empire he vnfoldeth the treaſon of *Alexander*; readeth the letter; and declareth in what maner hee was taken, and vpon what conditions deliuered. The Nobility promiſe to aſſiſt him, ſo that hee ſhould keepe his day of payment with the *Soldan*; and in anger advow, that they will neuer forſake him, vntill they ſee him reuenged on the Traytour *Alexander*. An Armie is inrolled in *Italie*, no man repining; and *Rome* approached. Thether hee ſendeth his Embaſſadors, and requireth of the Romanes (concealing yet a while his priuate wrongs) *that vpon hearing of either Biſhops cauſe*, they would reſtore concorde to the Church, by determining the right of the Papacie to one of the Elected. If thus they would doe, he promiſed to giue them peace, as alſo to reſtore, what in right they could challenge.

Hæc ſubſequentia Naucl. gen. 40. narrat. vt et alij pontificij, præcedentibus tamen omiſsis.

The Pope perceauing, that by theſe good courſes, the Emperour was become Lord of his deſires; by night he flieth to *Caietta*, afterward to *Beneuent*, and laſtly, in the habite of his Cooke to *Venice*. Where, after he had lien hid certaine moneths in a Monaſterie, he is at length made knowne, and in Senatorial habite by the commandement of Duke *Sebaſtian*, honorably receiued, and in his *Pontificalibus* accompanied to the temple of *Saint Mark*.

Frederick being giuẽ to vnderſtand of this reception, ſtormeth at the *Venetians* for receiuing their common aduerſarie. He deſireth them to ſend vnto him, the deſtroyer of the Cõmon wealth. The *Venetians* deny. *Frederick* ſendeth his Son with an Armada to demand the

man; but with prohibition at any hand to fight, before himselfe was come in person. *Otho* a Prince yong, frolicke and aduenturous, desirous of honour and glory, copeth with his enemies, is taken and made prisoner. Vpon whose captiuity, *Alexander* mounted vpon the wings of this prosperous successe, vtterly denieth to treat with *Cæsar*, vnlesse he would suppliantly come to *Venice*, and there accept the already written conditions of peace. Wherewith *Cæsar* being mooued not vpon any base conceit, or despaire of victory, but partly through his affectionate loue towards his child, but more for desire to settle a firme peace in *Europe*, assented, and impawned his Honor to come vpon the day prescribed.

Where according to promise, appearing, and proceeding to capittulation, *Alexander* sent him word, *That he would not absolue him from the censure of Excommunication vntill he come into the Temple of S. Marke.*

Naucl. generat. allegata.

Here is He now ariued, accoutred in humble and religious habiliment: The Pope, before a multitude of people, most papally commandeth him to lie agroofe on his belly, and suppliantly to aske forgiuenesse. The Emperor, German-like, simply suspecting, that a Bishop, who ought to haue been the mirour of modesty, would haue abused him with no grosse or dishonourable behauior, obeieth the Popes word, and so groueleth at his feet. At the sight whereof: He not only insulteth, but that worse is; most tyrannically he treadeth vpon his prostrated neck, and then blasphemously yelleth foorth this misapplied place of Scripture. *Thou shalt tread vpon the Aspe and the Basiliske, and thou shalt bruse downe the Lyon and the Dragon.*

Did

Did euer Hiſtory record of ſo ſauage a demeanor? Surely ſome barbarous ſouldiers, who in battell haue taken Princes priſoners, haue intreated them more inhumanely, then ſtood with their eſtates : *Sapores* the Perſian vſed to ſet his foot vpon the neck of *Valerianus* the captiuated Emperor, as he mounted his Horſe: The Tartarian *Tamerlan* (the correlatiue tyranny to this of the Popes) incloſing *Baiazeth* Emperour of Turkes in an yron Cage, carried him ſo diſhonoured through all his iournies. But what is this to a Pope? By how much the diſproportion holdeth betwixt a ſouldier and a Churchman, betweene a Chriſtian and an Ethnique, by ſo much is the immatuity of the Pope the more damnable. They being Barbarians, might plead ſome probability of excuſe, in that they miſuſed but their enemies, and thoſe by the law of Nations captiuated for ſeruility : But the Pope is a Chriſtian, *ſeruus ſeruorum*, a peace-maker, and a Prieſt; whoſe office is only to pray and to preach : Wherefore I can not blame *Bellarmine*, if he could make vs beleeue; that this Hiſtory may be doubted of, when I ſhall relate vnto you in the word of truth; That this mirror of Chriſtian Humility) *Cyclopica immanitate*, firſt, with a Gyantlike rudeneſſe ſaith mine Author) moſt ignominiouſly with his beſtiall feet preſumed to touch (nay to tread) vpon the ſacred necke of a mighty Emperour, then (as I ſaid) in peaceable maner lying agroofe, and humbly deſiring abſolution of an vniuſt Excommunication.

But why do I againſt the Precepts of hiſtory, thus laſh out, by aggreuating of ſo barbarous a cruelty, to mooue the mind of my Reader to compaſſion, ſithence

I can neuer do it,for that the preſident in it ſelfe goeth far beyond any delineation that humane wit can poſſibly poliſh it withall?*Vox faucibus hæret,&c.*

Well,*Cæſar* knowing himſelfe, and recalling his generous ſpirits; to ſhew that he was not a little moued at the indignity,openly calleth vnto the Pope; ſaying, *Non tibi,ſed Petro:* meaning that he became ſo deuout a ſuppliant,not to this Tyrant, but his *Apoſtolique Calling*. But the tyrannicall Pope, once againe bowing downe his reuerend necke with his beare-like pawes; reclaimeth,*Et Mihi & Petro.*

The good Emperor, that had neuer offended any man,no nor the Pope himſelfe,but his pride; albeit he could not but agrieue at this iniurious and baſe vſage, yet in regard of the common quiet (much preferred before his own dignity)held his peace: And after his abſolution,thus renued his grace with the Biſhop.

Henricus VI.

He raigned in the yeere 1191. *about the ſecond yeere of* Richard *the firſt:*

Platina in the life of Celeſtin the third.

THe Romaniſts thinking it no ſafe policy,too much at one inſtant to irritate the reuengefull ſpirits of ſecular Princes, ſmothered a while their domineering humours, vntill the dayes of *Celeſtine* the third. Who although he had beſtowed vpon *Henrie* for wife,*Conſtance* the Nun,the daughter of *Roger* the fourth King of *Sicil*, taken forth from the Monaſtery of *Panormo*, vpon condition, *that*

Tancred

Tancred the baſe Son of *Roger* now depoſed, (whome *Clement* the third had before to no purpoſe labored alſo to diſplant) ſhould hold both kingdoms in fee of the Church: Notwithſtanding ſome there are, who write, that becauſe this *Henry* puniſhed ſomewhat ſeuerely not only the *Apulian* and *Sicilian* Laickes, for entring into actuall rebellion againſt him, but alſo proceeded with like rigor againſt the Clerks and Biſhops, being guilty of the ſame conſpiracy; from ſome pulling their skins ouer their eares, from other their eies; impaling ſome vpon ſtakes, and incircling ſome of their heads with a flaming Garland; hee eſcaped not *Celeſtines* curſe, who by this time being weary of peace, intended nothing elſe but the diſpoſſeſſion of *Henry*, from the Crowne of both *Sicils*.

Bergomenſis in ſupplemento & eum ſequens Nau. gen. 40.

Philip the Sweuian.

He raigned in the yeere of Chriſt 1199. *about the laſt yeere of* Richard *the firſt.*

HOweuer the world fared in this age, certaine it is, that preſently after the death of *Henrie*, the rage of the Biſhop grew fiery hot againſt his ſucceſſor. For *Henrie* now lying vpon his death bed, had inſtituted *Innocent* the 3 (the ſucceſſor of *Celeſtine*) guardian to his yong infant, fower yeeres of age, yet choſen to the ſucceſſion of the Empire by the Suffrage of the Princes; To him he alſo recommended his wife *Conſtance* and ordained his own brother *Philip* Duke of *Hetruria* and *Sweuia* (during

Nauel. gen. 40. Cuſpinian in vita Henrici & Philippi.

the minority of the child) to bee his Lieutenant, through the whole Empire and the Kingdome of *Sicil*. But the Biſhop falſifying his faith of Guardianſhip, turneth traitor, and by ſetting al *Germany* in combuſtion, ſideth with the *Houſe of Sweuia*.

For as *Philip* poſting towards his ſick brother, by the way about *Mount Flaſco*, not far from *Viterbium*, vnderſtood that his brother was departed, tranported with a deſire of Soueraignty, hee haſtneth as faſt to *Haganoa*, the place of the Aſſembly of the Princes, and there worketh as many as he can, to fauour his proceedings.

Nocentius, who in ſhew deadly hated the Sweuians as perſecutors of the Church, but in truth ſorely thirſting after the reall poſſeſſion of *Sicil*, at firſt (to giue *Philip* to vnderſtand, that without his Holineſſe acted a part in all Princely policies, it were folly to vndertake great matters) he excepteth againſt him by an Excommunication, which ſtood on Record filed againſt him, in the daies of *Celeſtine*. Secondly to ſhew himſelfe a diſpleaſed Father, he ſendeth the Biſhop of *Sutrium* vnto him, to demand at his hand certaine Hoſtages, whoſe eyes not long agoe his brother *Henry* had cauſed to be put out. Thirdly, failing, againſt imagination of his will; for that *Philip* by confeſſing and repenting of his fault, had procured abſolution from the Legat, and remitted the Hoſtages: *In odium Philippi* he ſheweth the blind pledges to the people, and depriuing the Biſhop of *Sutrium*, for that without commiſſion hee had abſolued *Philip*, he confineth him into one of the Ilands: And finally, now to perfect his proiects, he recommendeth vnto the fauours of the Electors *Ber-*

thold

thold Duke of *Zazingia*, a Prince ſtrong and valiant, and whom he knew full well to be a deadly enemy to the Sweuians, becauſe he had before times beene moleſted by the wars of *Conrade*, the brother of *Philip*. The letters of his election written at large, are yet to bee ſeen. *C. venerabilem. de Electi poteſtate.*

But *Berthold*, being a wiſe and an Honorable Prince, knowing himſelf far inferior to *Philip*, and that he had been already nominated for Emperor by the generall good-liking of the Sweuians, Saxons, the Bauarians, the Bohemians and the Princes of the Rhene, ſo affected the fauor of his lawfull king, that in aſſurance of obedience, he gaue him for pledges his own Nephewes *Crinen* and *Berthold* Earles of *Vrach*, together with his perſonall oath of Allegeance. Whereat *Innocent* tooke ſo great an indignation, that he could not refraine, but belched out: *That either the Biſhop ſhould diſpoſſeſſe Philip of his Crown, or Philip diſpoſſeſſe the Biſhop of his Miter.* And forthwith he calleth from England *Otho* the ſonne of *Henry Leo*, a proud and harebraind Prince, and by ſending him the Imperiall Diadem, he ſetteth him vp againſt *Philip*; And to withdraw his ſubiects, he interdicteth him of all honor and authority.

Hereby aroſe a moſt peſtiferous diſ-vnion in the ſtate of *Germany*, but a maſſe of aduantages to the Pope and his Clergy. For as long as *Philip* and *Otho* by their inteſtine wars diſtracted the Empire, there ſcant fell void any Eccleſiaſticall dignity, yea almoſt ſcant no poore vicarage, but being made litigious by the cunning of Rome, the diceſion of the incumbency was remooued into the Popes Court, and there peraduenture com-

pounded; but not without the fleecing of both parties purſes. This the *Abbat of Vrſperg* in the end of one of his *Orations* doth ſet downe, for one of the trickes, wherby the Popedom is accuſtomed to trouble Chriſtendome, meane-while enriching their priuate coffers. Theſe be his words.

Reioyce (ſayeth he) *our mother* Rome: *for cataracts of treaſure are opened vpon earth, that riuers and maſſes of money in great abundance may flowe into thy boſome. Reioyce for the iniquitie of the ſonnes of men, for that rewards are accumulated vpon thee to reconcile miſchiefes. Reioyce for thy Adiutreſſe,* Diſcord; *for ſhee is let looſe from the bottomleſſe pit, euen to breake thy backe with bagges of ſiluer. Now thou enioyeſt that, which thou haſt long thirſted for: Sing a merrie Song, for by the reciprocall malice of men, and not by thy religous workes, thou haſt got victorie ouer the world. All men flock vnto thee, not for deuotions ſake, or in puritie of conſcience, but by rewards to compound their contentions, and to redeeme their treſpaſſes.*

And albeit that *Odoacer* King of *Bohemia*, *Herman Lantgraue* of *Thuringe*, the *Biſhop of Argentine*, and *Adulph Archprelate of Colein*, being terrified by the papal curſe, had ſided with *Otho*, aſſiſted with the forces of his Vncle *Richard*, King of *England*; yet being ſtrong with his *Hetrurians* leauied in *Italie*, and his *Sweuians* raiſed in *Germanie*, he beginneth with *Alſatia*, next neighbour to *Sweuia*, and waſteth it: then falling vpon the *Thuringer*, confederated with the *Bohemian*, hee inforceth him to ſubmiſſion, and routeth the *Bohemian*. This done, through the reconciliation of

Naucl. gen. 41. Vrſperg. fo. 323.

of the *Colennois*, at *Confluence* hee treateth a league with the Dukes of *Brabant* & *Lotharinge*: with whom and his associates descending to *Aquisgran*, with great solemnity he is there crowned by the fore-said *Colennois*. Finally, meeting with *Otho* not farre from *Colen*, he put him to flight, and without his companions enforceth him to flie againe into *England*.

When the Princes perceiued these prosperous successes to attend *Philip*, being now throughly wearied with these ciuill combustions; by a generall consent, they conclude to send an honourable Embassie to *his Holinesse*; who vpon restitution of *Philip* into fauour, should intreat his fatherhood to confirme him in the Rights of the Empire.

He giueth audience, and returneth for aunswere; that vnlesse *Philip* will giue vnto *Richard* his brothers sonne (newly created Earle of *Thuscanie*) *Spolet*, and *Marchia Anconitana*, with the daughter of *Philip*, hee will neuer harken vnto the Emperours Ambassie. Behold here another trick of Popish discontent: By this match, hee onely meant and hoped to inuest his Nephew in the perpetuall inheritance of these goodly Lordships.

Thus haue these Holy fathers long since accustomed, vnder the habit of Saint *Peter*, to fish rather to inrich their Nephewes, their kindred, and their Gossips, then to be carefull ouer the Church and the common-weale; yea, in these respects they haue often moued warres; so that the meanes, by which God hath ordained to reconcile families, & to corroborat peace; they haue inuerted to maintaine factions, and to serue their owne purposes. *See Guicciardine.*

After the Embaſſadors had heard the propoſed condition, altogether impertinent to the buſineſſe, whereabout they had taken ſo much paines; they tooke it as a ſtrange motion; *That the daughter of a King, ſhould be affianced to the baſe Nephew of a Pope:* Howbeit, not to offend his Holineſſe, they anſwered, that they had no commiſſion to treat of any ſuch ouerture: but deſire, that by ſome people of his owne, hee would acquaint their Lord and Maſter with his Holineſſe requeſt.

Whereupon, with more heat, then good diſcretion, he adioyneth vnto the Embaſſadors of *Philip* (now vpon their returne) *Hugoline* and *Leo* Cardinals of *Hoſtia*, and Saint *Croſſes in Ieruſalem*. Who arriuing at *Auguſta*, were honourably receiued, and highly feaſted, but vpon notice of the proud and prepoſterous meſſage of their Maſter (nothing aſhamed to violate the Conſtitutions of his Lord *Peramount*) the King and his Counſell ſecretly laughing at the *Legats* diſcourſing vpon matters, nothing tending to Peace and Abſolution; from *Auguſta* the Court remoued to *Spiers* and ſo to *Northius*. And there after long debatement, the peace was ratified, and the Biſhops Nephew reiected; vpon condition, that the *daughter of Philip (whom the foole-Biſhop eagerlie inſtanced) ſhould be affianced to* Otho; *And that he liuing in priuate, during the life of* Philip, *after his death, ſhould ſucceed in the Empire.*

Not long after this treatie *Philip* died: for leauing *Saxonie*, and for recreation ſake retiring vnto *Babenberg in Sweuia*, he was traiterouſly ſlaine in his Chamber, there ſolely remaining, after the opening of a vain, by *Otho of Wittelsback*, Nephew vnto him vpon whom *Frederick* (as we told you before) had beſtowed *Bauaria*.

ria. The cauſe of his diſcontent aroſe, for that being a ſuter to his daughter, in regard of ſome imputation of diſloyaltie, he had beene repulſed, and the Lady, by the Emperour, her fathers good liking, affianced to *Otho.*

After this lamentable regicide, *Otho* by the generall conſent of the Nobility, aſſembled at *Francofurt*, is ſaluted Emperour.

Otho the fourth.

Otho, by conſent of the Princes being thus inſtalled in the Imperial throne, ſetteth all things through *Germany* in good order; and then with a warlike Armie marching by the vally of *Trent*, hee paſſeth by *Lombardie*, and ſo commeth to *Rome*, to receiue the Imperiall diademe: where, by the Pope, the Clergie, and the people hee is heartely welcommed, and honourably receiued: And ſo much the rather, the Pope ſtudied to honour and gratifie his Maieſtie, for that hee had heretofore alwaies aſſiſted his partie, againſt *Philip* his predeceſſour. *Naucl. gen. 41. Vrſperg. in the life of Otho the 4.*

But this extraordinarie kindneſſe was of no long continuance betweene theſe new friends; but being ſoone ripe, ſoone vaniſhed, and turned into hatred. For vpon the very day of the Coronation, an affray began betweene the *Dutch* and the *Romanes*, about the donatiues which the Emperors accuſtomed to beſtow at this time amongſt the ſouldiers; ſo that (as report went

vent) about one thouſand and one hundred men were ſlaine, and as many wounded. Whereupon *Otho* being moued at ſo great an indignity; complained vnto the Romans for reparation of amends; which they promiſed, but performed ſo ſlowly, that the Emperor began to enter into ſuſpition, that the Pope himſelfe became a fautor of the tumult; whereupon hee departed, towards *Millan*, and there laying aſide his Imperiall enſignes, hee infeſted *Tuſcanie*, *Mark Ancona*, and *Romandiola*, *vulgo*, *S. Peters patrimony*. Moreouer in warlike manner he inuaded *Apulia*, ſubdued the Dutchy of *Capua*, and tooke from *Frederick* the ſecond many other Cities pertayning to the kingdome of *Sicil*, at that time miſtruſting no ſuch outrage.

Vpon intelligence hereof *Innocent* admoniſheth *Otho* to reſtore the feodary poſſeſſions of the Church, and to abſtaine from further violence. But *Cæſar* not only reiecteth his admonitions, but infeſteth thoſe poſſeſſions, with more and more ſouldier-like depredations. *Innocent* flyeth to Excommunication, depriueth him of his Imperiall titles, and abſolueth the Princes of their oth of allegiance towards *Otho*. And that more is, prohibiteth vnder paine of damnation, that no man ſerue, account, or call *Otho* Lord or Emperor. It is reported, that he cauſed the Princes anew to ſweare vnto *Frederick* King of *Sicil*, being as yet an Infant; and him he made choice of to ſucceed in his place.

Naucl. gen. Whereupon *Otho* returned into *Germany*; where, albeit in the Aſſembly of *Noremberg*, vpon complaint of the Popiſh tyranny, and the cowardize of the Princes, he had entred a ſtrict bond of alliance with many; and had moreouer taken ſharpe reuenge vppon *Her-*

man

man Lantgraue of *Thuringe* by wasting his territories, for that at the Popes commandement he had violated his faith: yet at last being forsaken of his people, hee was glad to retire into *Saxonie*, where the fourth day after his royall mariage at *Northuis* with the daughter of *Philip*, he fell sick, and died.

Fredericke the second.

He raigned 1212. *About the thirteenth yeare of King* IOHN.

FRederick the second, by the vniuersall consent of all Writers, a Prince worthy all attributes of honour, as well for his gouernment in peace, as his cariage in warre; vpon the deiection of *Otho*, at the commandement of *Innocent* the third, tooke vpon him the Imperiall Crowne at *Aquisgran*. And in the yeare next following (*Otho* departing at *Perusium*) he was crowned at *Rome*, and honoured with the name of *Augustus*, by *Honorius* the third. With him hee brought many rich gifts into *Italie*, and amongst the rest, the Countie of *Funda*; which with manie notable donatiues he bestowed vpon the Church; And then setting *Germanie* in order, he prepared himselfe for the iourney of *Ierusalem*, according to the custome of his Auncestors: Who being deceaued by their false pretexts of Religion, imagined that they were not worthie to merit the Imperiall Diademes, but by vowes and donatiues;

Cuspinian in vita Frederici. Pandulphus Collomitius.

First, forgetting that no Pope, but the Princes, and the people, were interessed in the election of the Emperours: And secondly, not fore seeing, that the Priests, who had too sharply felt the armes of the Princes to their extreame losse, were not so carefull to recouer *Ierusalem* for the Christian good, as they were prouident to direct, or distract the forces of stirring Potentates; That mean while they might liue at pleasure, and prouide for their bellies. For the Princes being sequestred into the farthest parts of the world (this pretext I confesse, caried a great shew of zeale & honesty) who was left to hinder them, from making free vse of their wits at home, and that without restraint or contradiction.

Howeuer *Fredcrick* in the beginning caried himself bountifull and obedient towards *Honorius*; notwithstanding, his vertues could neither safe conduct his life against their subtilties, impieties and clandestine councels; neither his bountie extenuate or lenifie their conceiued malices against his person. For, three most wicked Bishops successiuely succeeding one another, for almost thirtie yeares space, so hardly kept him to it, that his most barbarous enemies, the *Turks* and *Saracens*, may be reported to haue made faire and gentle warres against this most warlike Emperour, in regard of those trickes and tragedies, which the Romanists played him.

Pandulfus in vita Frederici. Vrsperg. & Alij.

First, *Honorius* immediatly after the receit of his Donatiues, without any pretence of receiued displeasure, seditiously maintained and acquited from their oathes of allegeance the two Earles of *Tuscanie*, *Richard* and *Thomas*, condemned of treason, & the Emperors publique

lique & dangerous enemies. Secondly, that with more facility they might make vse of his fauour to purpose, and vsurpe vpon the Kingdomes of *Sicil* and *Apulia*, he branded the Emperor with the censure of excommunication, and (as far as lay in his power) depriued him of all Imperial soueraignty. After this, he prouoked the *Lombards* to rebellion; so that they repelled the Princes of *Germany*, approching to a diet to be held at *Cremona* by the Emperors direction: and had done more, had not God taken him out of this world, to accompanie his predecessours in the vale of death.

Gregorie the ninth succeedeth: He to seeme nothing inferiour to his predecessor, euen in the first step to his Papacie, raged worse then *Honorius*. He accuseth him, that according to his vow, vndertaken in the time of *Honorius*, to passe vnto *Ierusalem*, hee had not accomplished it within the prefixed time: and therefore renewing the excommunication, hee condemneth him without allowance of defence, vnsommoned and vnheard; yea, he vtterly denieth either to heare, or to admit vnto the presence of his councell, the honourable Embassadors of his Maiestie, bringing honest & lawful reasons in excuse of their Master; yea, petitioning to be admitted vnto satisfaction, in case their Lord had in any thing offended: But the Pope notwithstanding all offer of submission, daily intimateth his fulminations; confirmeth in their rebellions, *Iohn* King of *Ierusalem*, the Earls of *Tuscany*, the Emperors rebels, & the *Nobles of Lombardy*; And forbiddeth the Emperors seruants to appeare at the day of the Assembly, proclaimed by the Emperor, to be held at *Rauenna*; And spoileth the crossed souldiers, bound for the iourney of *Ierusalem*, of all

their neceſſaries. The Emperor obſeruing this paſſage, to lenifie his papall anger, paſſeth the ſea, laieth ſiege to *Acon*, and finiſheth many glorious attempts to the honor of Chriſtendom and the Chriſtian religion. Meane time, the Pope (O the deepe abyſſe of Popiſh impiety) taketh his aduantage vpon the Emperours abſence, ſubdueth *Apulia*, prohibiteth the croſſed companies to paſſe the ſeas, & committeth infinit ſuch like maſteries, not only vnbeſeeming a Chriſtian Biſhop, but much more Chriſt his Vicar. For firſt, he ſlaieth thoſe Embaſſadors, whom the Emperor had ſent vnto him to congratulate his good ſucceſſe againſt the Soldan, & then to terrifie thoſe cities of *Apulia*, which refuſed his yoke of ſubiection, he giueth out publique rumors, that the Emperor was departed this world. Hee alſo maketh meanes vnto the *Soldan* (mean time to work his will in *Apulia*) that he ſhould not capitulate to ſurrender the Holy lād vnto *Cæſar*. Here behold the piety of this Holy father: Here behold his ſtudy, & conuerſion of leuies of prouiſions taken vp through chriſtendom to be imployed againſt Gods enemies. This is his perſecution of Infidels, this his Croiſado againſt Turks & Pagans, viz. To inuert chriſtian armes againſt chriſtians, to forſake a chriſtian Emperor warring in a forraine land againſt the enemies of the Chriſtian faith; and eſpecially (I dare auow) for the ſafety of *Italie*, as experience hath ſince made manifeſt. For mine own part in the behalfe of the whole chriſtian cōmon weale, I can but condole for the generall captiuity of *Iſrael*, but as for the Popes I ſay to them, as ſomtime *mutata regione Taſſo* propheti cally ſaid of the Greeks vpō the very ſame Argument:

Tatine their guide, and except Tatine, none

Of

Of all the Greeks went with the Christian Hoſt:
O ſinne! O ſhame! O Greece acurſt alone!
Did not this fatal war affront thy coaſt?
Yet ſateſt thou an idle looker on,
And glad attendedſt which ſide won or loſt;
Now if thou be a bondſlaue vile become,
No wrong is that, but Gods moſt righteous doome.

O Rome.

But, as in another place the ſame Poet ſpake of the Grecian Emperor, ſo the German Monarch might at this time ſay of the Romiſh Prelate:

And for I doubt the Romiſh prelate ſlie,
Will vſe gainſt me ſome of his wonted craft
To ſtay their paſſage, or diuert awry
Elſewhere his promiſ'd forces, &c.

Neceſſity will inforce me to returne; And ſo he did, towards *Italy*. Where, albeit by the way he had intercepted the Popes letters directed to the *Soldan*, containing the aforeſaid inſtructions; yet hauing recouered the loſſes ſuffered in his abſence; moſt heroically for the loue of Chriſt he beareth & diſſembleth all forepaſſed greuances: And in pure deuotion to peace, of his own accord he beſeecheth his holineſſe to receiue him into fauour, & in requital therof, he proteſteth to becom his future true liegeman for the kingdome of *Sicil*. What ſay you vnto this, you hypocrites? *Heere you ſee a king, humble, contrit, & ſtudious of peace; through this whole diſcourſe haue I yet read of no ſuch Pope. What are thē the ſigns of chriſtianity, and true religion? war or peace? Humility or pride? If you ſay peace & humility, where then muſt we ſeek them? In the breaſts commonly of chriſtian Princes. And no maruell, for both the written word of God, and conſcience, haue warranted their authorities: yours not ſo, at leaſtwiſe, in ſuch worldly maner, as you vſe it. For being nouell, and*

Cuſpinian in the life of Fredericke.

conuerſant in pompeous habiliments, in Lordlie appellations, in rich patrimonies, in commerce, in treaties, inueſtiture of Princes, in maintaining of garriſons, in rigging of gallies, in entertaining of noble men and captaines for ſeruice, how can it chuſe but by plots and deuiſes, to maintaine theſe worldly charges, and titulary honors, cleane contrary to the example of Chriſt, the doctrine of the Apoſtles, and the modeſty of the Primitiue Church) you ſhall bee conſtrained to mingle the leuen of the Lord, with the abomination of Baal; and in ſtead of preaching and praier (your ſole function) to ſpend your times in perfecting and preuenting your own imaginations, and your enemies deſignements. For I know the kingdome of heauen is not of this world, neither will fleſh and blood reſpect you as they ought, if as you ſay, you ſhould carry lowly ſhewes, and truely practiſe Chriſtian humilitie: but you know, where your reward is laid vp; Imitate this good Emperor, and thinke with your ſelues, that in this he followed your ſayings, and not your doings. Imitate you your ſayings, but ſaie, and doe, and then will the world turne their bitter reprehenſions, to ſweeteſt Sonnets in praiſe and admiration of your liues & Embaſſies. And here I craue pardon for digreſſion.

Cuſpinian. Platina in the life of Gregory. Naucl. gen. 41. Platina citans.

Againe to the Hiſtory: Albeit, moſt of the Princes of *Germanie*, Eccleſiaſticall and ſecular, namely, *Eberhard of Salisburg*, *Seyfrid of Ratisbone*, *Sibot of Auguſta*, Biſhops: *Leopold of Auſtria*, *Otho of Merouia*, and *Barnard of Carinthia*, Dukes, with many other Nobles, did to their vtmoſt, labour with the Pope to reconcile his diſpleaſure againſt *Cæſar* then reſiding at *Capua*: yet could not his Maieſty obtaine promiſe of pardon, vntill he had giuen aſſurance to pay into the Churches exchequer by the hands of the Maſter of the *Teutonick* order,

order, the ſumme of one hundred and twenty thouſand ounces of gold. Is this to forgiue thy brother ſeauenty times ſeuen? Or can ſinne and treſpaſſes be waſhed away by Maſſes of mony? O impudent merchant, Antichriſtian impoſtor! The price being made, pardon followeth, and the Emperor inuited to a riotous feaſt, where amongſt many diſhes, *ſimulata Amicitia*, I aſſure you, is carried vp for a ſeruice. For the Emperor was ſcarce vpon his way towards *Germanie*, to repreſſe the ſonne of *Henrie*, who with the Lombards and Thuſcians had rebelled againſt him, but he is openly giuen to vnderſtand by the Princes, that by meſſengers in the name of the Biſhop, they haue ſtrict commandement, not to acknowledge any man of the Emperors family for King: and moreouer, that hee had conſpired with the ſtates of *Italie* to diſgrade him of all imperiall iuriſdiction.

Whereat *Cæſar*, being full of diſcontent, hauing tamed his rebells, hee plagueth the mutinous Cities of *Hetruria* and *Lombardie*. The Pope is now become more then mad, and to diſgorge melancholy (for otherwiſe it will ſtifle him) againe the third time he curſeth the Emperor with book, bell and candle. And to be ſure at this blow to tumble him quite downe from the height of all Imperiall dignity; firſt hee treateth a league with the Venetians: Then by the counſel of the Kings of France and *England*, hee ſummoneth a councell to be celebrated at Rome in the Lateran: wherein is a great diſpute about the vtter aboliſhment of the regall authority of *Fredericke*. Before the firſt ſitting the heads of the Apoſtles *S. Peter* and *S. Paul*, with due ſolemnity are carried round about the City. And laſtly,

Collomitius, quem præ cæteris, vide. Platina in vita Gregory noni.

laſtly, in the Cathedrall Church of *Saint Peter*, he maketh a ſermon full of Commiſeration; proclaimeth the *Croiſado*, and promiſeth life euerlaſting to as many, as ſhall take vp armes againſt his Maieſtie.

Frederick being giuen to vnderſtand, that the *Croiſado* was now proclaimed againſt him, which was neuer from the daies of *Adam* heard of, to be divulged againſt any, but Turks and Infidels, waxeth exceeding angry, and directeth his forces to the walls of *Rome*; combatteth with the *Romanes*, rowteth them with a miſerable ſlaughter, and ſpareth not a man, marked with the Croſſe. To ſome croſſe-wayes he commanded foure words to be giuen. Others had their heads clouen a croſſe, and the Clergie-men hee willed to be ſhauen to the quick, and the ſigne of the croſſe to be imprinted vpon their bald pates; that ſo they, who were but ſaid to be ſigned with the Croſſe, might be ſo ſigned indeed.

Afterward, by a long and tedious ſiege, hauing forced *Furentia*, and hearing that the Pope had ſent forth his Legats, to ſummon the Engliſh and French Prelats to the Councell; he ſhutteth vp by ſea and by land all paſſages: and by the ſeruice of the *Piſans* taketh ſome Cardinals, and many Prelates paſſing by ſea, and committeth them to priſon. Two Cardinals hee drowneth, and aſſigneth to the gallowes ſome Abbots and Biſhops, but eſpecially the Popes brother, for their vnpardonable treaſons.

Whereupon, this good holy father, ſorrowing to ſee ſo many of the Lords annointed, for treaſon to be ſo ſharply vſed by *Frederick*, became ſo moued and diſtempered at the indignity, that falling into ſickneſſe, through

through griefe of minde, hee departed the ſame way, which his beloued Sons, had but lately foregone.

Celeſtine the fourth ſucceedeth, and intendeth to proceed in the ſteps of his predeceſſor againſt *Frederick*, had not death ſummoned him to attend another buſineſſe in a fitter place. For hee ſate Biſhop but eighteene daies, and then was poiſoned in drinking.

Innocentius the third ſucceeded; whilom the Emperours deuoteſt friend, but now his moſt bitter enemy; perſecuting his Maieſty with more furie, then any of his deceaſed predeceſſors. And thus it fell out. *Petrus de vineis li. 1. ep. 33.*

Baldwin the Grecian Emperor, hoping to play the part of a good Chriſtian, in ſupplying the office of him, who was vtterly degenerated from all remembraunce of his owne function and calling, laboured what hee could to ſet vnity betweene theſe two mighty monarchs: (for ſo is all Popery in truth, though not in ſhew.) But the Biſhop, hauing no mind to hearken to ſo Chriſtian-like a motion, dealeth with the *Geneois* (hauing a Nauie at that time riding at anchor in the Port of *Centumcelle*) to tranſport him vnto *Lyons* in *France*, and there illuding both Princes for their kindneſſe and paines-taking, proclaimeth a concionable; cauſeth *Fredericke* to bee cited, yea himſelfe in the end of his Homely, citeth him: and for default of appearance (although his ſufficient ſubſtitute, *Thadeus Sueſſanus*, a moſt famous Lawyer, humbly deſired his Furiouſneſſe but to allow him a ſufficient returne, whereby hee might haue conuenable time for his repaire to *Lyons*) he denieth him reſpit; accurſeth him; depriueth him of al Imperial honors; abſolueth his ſubiects, & abetteth them in deſpight of *Frederick*, to make *Collenutius & Cuſpinian in vita Frederici. Hieron. Martius.*

choice of ſome other. Moſt impudently alleadging (ſo did euer the Phariſies by Chriſt, becauſe otherwiſe they could not effect their wills) very vile, falſe and forged ſuggeſtions againſt him, as blaſphemies, periuries, ſacrilege, and ſuch like ſtuffe: which ſee in *C. Apoſtol. de ſent. & re iudicata, lib. 6.*

The Emperor hearing hereof, ſetteth *Italie* in order, and with a compleat army marcheth towards *Lyons*, there face to face to bandy with this inſolent Prelate. But thinke you a Pope to be ſo ſilly an Aſſe, as to deale with his forewarned enemy? no beleeue it. His conſcience can not aſſure his heart to look him in the face: He muſt deale altogether vpon aduantage, ciuill diſſentions, alienations of obedience, trecheries, periuries, diſcontents of neighbour-Princes and ſubiects. At which weapons he now dealeth with the Emperour; and hauing his ſcouts, his eſpialls and Intelligencers in euery corner through the world, by their ſeruices, he worketh the baniſhed gentlemen of *Parma*, to returne to their country, and there to plot out myriads of rebellions againſt thoſe Cities, which as yet in *Italie* ſtood well affected to the Emperors ſeruice. Whereupon before his Maieſty could come to *Taurinum*, in feare that the reſidue of the Italian people would one follow anothers example, he quitteth his Lyons-iourny; and by letters, directed both vnto the King of *France*, as alſo to the prelats there aſſembled, in moſt honeſt termes he refuteth his enemies obiections, diſcourſeth at large vpon the inſufficiency and nullity of a Popiſh curſe, and withall ſtrongly prepareth by ſea to reduce *Parma* to its former obedience.

Cuſp. in vita Frederici. Nauc. gen. 42. Epi. extat in epiſtolis Petri de Vineis. epiſt. 32.

But good Emperour, the greater thy learning, the more

more their griefe: the greater thy courage, the more vigilant is thy diuill-like enemy for thy ruine. Thou ſtaieſt at *Groſſetum*, about the ſea coaſt of *Sienna*, there to refreſh thy wearied and ouerwrought ſpirits, with ſome diſports of hauking; Thou wilt not get thee into *Germanie*, nor repaſſe the mountaines: Then will thy ghoſtly father meditate night and day to vndoe thee; then will he traiterouſly inueigle thy principall ſeruants, ſome by wreſted ſentences of Scripture, and ſome by corruption of mony, to worke thy downfall. Thus imitate they Chriſt in bleſſing their enemies; Thus honor they Kings according to *Saint Peter*; But (thanke thy God) the conſpiracie was detected, and the traytors worthely puniſhed.

De hac coniuratione vide ep. 10. & 52. li. 2. Rurſus epi. 19. & 62. li. 3.

Nocentius beeing fallen into a deſperate fury, for that he had failed in theſe his moſt nefarious proiects, in ſeeing the Emperor for this time fully cleered from his diueliſh intendments, grew yet reſolute, not to giue ouer, vntill hee had really diſpoſſeſt him of his crowne & life. Which to effect, by threats, exhortations, & promiſes he aweth the Princes of *Germanie* to depoſe *Frederick*, and in his place to ſet vp *Henrie* Lantgraue of *Thuringe*. But this gentleman following the ſeruice of his maſter at the ſiege of *Vlmes*, was deadly wounded the ſame yeere wherin he was nominated King. So alſo his ſucceſſor *William*, beeing imploied in other wars, performed nothing in fauour of his Furiouſneſſe. Whereupon the Pope obſeruing his Anathems to be vilified, his rebellious hirelings in *Italy* to be throughly perſecuted, & his aduerſary to be reſolute and vndaunted, after long and manifold trecheries plotted, and fruſtrated, at laſt, he procureth him to be poiſoned in the

See D.B.290.

two and thirtith yeere of his raigne, and the fifty ſeauenth of his age, on the very ſame day wheron he was declared Emperor, *Cæſar*, *Auguſtus*.

Thus, this moſt worthy Heros, this *Frederick* the ſecond Emperor of *Germany*, king of both *Sicils* and *Hieruſalem*, Lord of *Sardinia* and *Italie*, & Duke of *Sweuia*, an excellent Prince, adorned with all good gifts dained by God vnto man, aſwell for the furniture of mind, as body; valiant, honorable, liberall; a great linguiſt, and excellent well learned, finiſhed his mortall race: who, had he not been diuerted, from turning his Chriſtian Armes againſt the Pagans, by the rebellions of Italy, and the Papall abetments thereto, verely he had merited more praiſe of the Chriſtian world, then *Alexander* in due could haue exacted of his Macedonian ſubiectes.

Verely, If this our Age (miſerably ſhaken with this inueterate Papall tyranny) by this preſident would learne, what emolument, peace and plenty would accrue both to the Church and common-weale, by due ballancing the temporall and Eccleſiaſticall Authorities; then would I not doubt, but to behold the German Empire moſt great, moſt glorious, and the Papall vſurpation once again reduced to its pure and primitiue integrity. More in commendation of this good Emperor I can not ſay, but onely wiſh that the *Motto*, which was once vnderwritten *Brutus* his ſtatue, and now due to him (*vtinam viueres*) might at this day be reuiued in the hearts of all Chriſtian Potentates to reuindicate their priſtinate prerogatiues.

But who ſhall recomfort the Laments of *Sion*? Albeit that this moſt worthy Generall was gathered in peace

peace to the bed of his fathers, yet Death had no priuiledge to giue period either to the extinguiſhment or ſatiation of theſe Popes neuer dying malice. For, againſt all humane beliefe, and the diuine precepts, it raged with ſo inhumane a feruencie againſt this Emperors poſterity, that it neuer gaue ouer, vntil it had depriued his iſſue both of life and Empire.

So did it in the powder treaſon.

For forthwith from the deceaſe of *Frederick*, theſe (three Popiſh Sultans) *Innocent* the third, *Alexander* and *Vrban* the fourth, following the continual ſtreame of their proud fortunes, imployed the vtmoſt of their meanes to re-inueſt the Kingdome of *Naples* in the Church, and to ſtrip thereof the Houſe of *Sweuia*; but in vaine; for *Manfred* maintained and retained it valiantly as yet againſt all their violences; vntill *Clement* the fifth following the claime of his Predeceſſor *Vrbans* Intruſion, called *Charles* Earle of *Prouince* and *Aniow* out of *France*, to take poſſeſſion thereof: vpon condition, that *Manfred* being expulſed, Hee ſhould yearely pay vnto the Church of *Rome* in the Name of a *Tenure* thirtie thouſand Duckets; And for farther encouragement; *Not to accept the inueſtiture thereof, though freelie offered, from the Romane Emperour*, hee cauſed him to be ſtiled, King of both *Sicils*. Which done, in the Lateran Church, hee is inaugurated with the Crowne of *Sicil* and *Hieruſalem*. And after manie and various conflicts, hee not onely ouerthroweth, and ſlayeth *Manfred* at *Beneuent*, betrayed by his people: but alſo, extinguiſheth the ſole heire of the noble houſe of *Sweuia*, the ſtem of many worthy Emperors, *Conrade* the ſon of *Conrade*, whō he got vnto his power by treaſō neer *Naples*; & there by the wicked

Platina in vita Clementis quarti.

Nauel. gen. 43.

dispensatorie counsel of the Pope, with more then Phalarian cruelty struck off his head, for going about to recouer his owne, but indeed, vpon *suggestion* that hee persecuted the Church.

So alwaies Pap. cauill.

For *Clement*, after he had heard the opinion of manie wise men, perswading him that *Conrade*, as being the onely branch of the most noble house of *Sweuia*, was to be preferred, and obliged to the Romane sea by fauours and affinitie, turned himselfe to *Charles*, and would needes know of him, what he also deemed: To whom the Traytor made this butcherly Reply. *Vita Conradini, mors Caroli: Mors Conradini, vita Coroli* .i. *The life of Conrade will be death to Charles*; *The death of Conrade, life to Charles.* By which his brutish opinion, hee thus whetted on a minde already prepared for murder; by manifest presumptions fore-shewing, that hee was already acquainted with some plot of treason against *Conrade*. For after he vnderstood, that *Conrade* with a puissant armie of *Germanes*, was passed *Viterbium*, where then his Holinesse resided, he was heard to propheſie, *That he was led as a Lamb to the slaughter*.

Thus, the posteritie of *Frederick* being for manie ages turmoiled by this succession of Bishops, after infinit practises at last was vtterly ruinated by these bloudie monsters: yea, the Princes of *Germanie* were so involued in these fatal oppositiõs, that none of thẽ either daring or willing to weare a Crowne at so deare a reckoning, *Alphons* of *Spaine*, and *Richard* of *England*, by mony and the Popes fauour (as the world saith) began to aspire vnto that Dignity, which for so many ages past, the Germaines alone had enioyed, and honourably maintained.

But

But neither of them, either in iealouſie one of another, or in feare of their predeceſſors harmes, euer came to the reall poſſeſſion thereof, ſo that for the ſpace almoſt of 22. yeares, the Empire became an Anarchy, and ſo continued, vntill by the generall ſuffrage of all the Princes, *Rodulph of Haueſpurg* was choſen Emperour.

Herein let all Chriſtians note the beginning, progreſſe and ſequell of all Popiſh practiſes.

Rodulphus Habſpurgicus.

He raigned Anno 1273. *About the ſecond yeare of* Edward *the firſt.*

AFter theſe lamentable Tragedies acted vpon the perſon of *Frederick* & his iſſue, is *Rodulph* of *Haueſpurg*, elected King of *Romanes*. Who, albeit he had pleighted his faith to *Gregorie* the tenth, that hee would come to *Rome*, and there be crowned; as alſo, had ſtudied to deſerue the friendſhip of him, and other his ſucceſſours, with extraordinarie indeuours; For that, time had taught him, that euen againſt all humane reaſon, this viperous generation had clearely extinguiſhed the two moſt worthy and glorious families, of *France* and *Sueuia*; As alſo, for that, they had transferred the Kingdome of *Naples* from the race of *Frederick*, to the houſe of *Aniow*; and therfore thought with himſelfe, that ſuch Potentates, as they, were not raſhly to be prouoked, eſpecially being now ſhielded with the fauours of the *French*, and the peeuiſhneſſe of the

the Germane Biſhops; As alſo, that it was worke enough, beſeeming the Maieſtie of a good and gracious Emperour, to tender the welfare of his natiue Country, now almoſt ruinated and rent by ciuill diſſentions: Notwithſtanding his godlineſſe, his clemencie, his deuotion, his humanity, his modeſtie, and his obſeruancie, yet could hee deſerue no other retribution from theſe vngratefull Politicians, but intruſions vpon his Crowne, and taunts againſt his perſon.

Mutius. li.21. Naucl.gen.44. For *Honorius* the fourth, being Biſhop at that ſeaſon, arrogating vnto himſelfe all Regall authority, directly againſt the good will of *Rodulph*, conſtituted *Prizzualna* Earle of *Ianua*, vicar Generall of the Empire throughout *Italy*. And after his Maieſtie for mony had quite claimed vnto many Cities their liberties, this *Honorius* moſt wickedly ſealed this ſcandalous tranſaction.

Naucl.vbi ſupra. After the deceaſe of *Honorius*, *Nicholas* the fourth had vtterly diſpoſſeſt this Emperour of *Romandiola* and *Rauenna*, vnder the falſe pretext of an expedition againſt the *Turke*, had not Death taken truce with his traiterous intents. By a new creation of two Kings in *Italie*, the one to gouerne *Lumbardy*, the other *Tuſcanie*, he had plotted, that by the commodiouſneſſe of their ſcituations all alongſt the *Teutonick* Alps, from hence by armes he might alwaies haue meanes to curb the *French*, who now hold *Sicil*, and the goodly Kingdome of *Naples* in full poſſeſſion.

Paralip. Vrſp. Wherof *Rodulph* taking notice, reſoluing with himſelfe neuer to be made a ſtale to an other mans deſpight, which by affectation of a titularie Crowne in *Italie*, publiquely at all times giueth forth, that at ſome time

time or other, he would find ſufficient occaſions of diuerſion and redreſſe; but in plain termes he intimateth to his friends, that he was wholly deterd from iourneying into *Italy*, for that he had formerly obſerued, *That the entrance of the Cæſars thereinto was applauded, honoured, and full of hopes: but their returnes awkward, heauie, mournfull and miſerable.* Not impertinently alluding vnto *Eſops* fable of the Wolfe; who told the Lyon lying ſick in his den, That in truth he had no reaſon to enter, conſidering that he could well obſerue the footing of euery beaſt in entrance, going forward, but not of one, returning backward.

Albertus Primus.

He raigned 1298. *About the ſix and twentieth yeare of* Edward *the firſt.*

ALbeit *Albert* ſucceeding his father *Rodulph*, in the Empire, continued the ſame obſeruancy towards the Roman Monarchy, as his father formerly had done: yet could he by no meanes eſcape the bitter quips & taunts of theſe cloiſtered aſſes. For, at what time by his Ambaſſadours according to cuſtome hee praied of *Boneface* the eight, the Confirmation of his Election, *Boneface* hauing a ſword by his ſide, and the Imperiall Crowne vppon his head, ſheweth himſelfe in publique to the aſſemblie, and with a high voice exclaymeth: *Ego ſum Cæſar & Pontifex:* Behold, here is *Cæſar* and the Pope: And in furie

Cuſpi. in vita Alberti.

Paralip. Vrſperg.

(whereas it mought haue been done without his priuity or authority)hee reiecteth the Election as friuolous and of no force; denieth confirmation,and with a full-foule mouth,calleth him *Homicide*.

Afterwards,vpon a bitter quarrell arising between this *Maleface* and *Philip* King of *France*, for that his Maiesty would not acknowledge him for his supreme Lord,he chãged his first opinion;aprooued *Albert* Emperor;by his Breues inuested himwith the Kingdom of *France*, and in a full Consistorie Excommunicated *Philip*. Yet againe when *Albert* re-answered, that he would not stir one foote against the King of *France*, vnlesse his Holynesse would confirme him and his heires in the Kingdome and Empire : The Pope, not able to conceale his imprisoned displeasure,most arrogantly replied : *Non futurum id Iezabele viuente*; *That, that should neuer come to passe,so long as Iezabel liued* By which abusiue name, he pointed at that most noble Dame *Elizabeth*, the wife of *Albert*, the daughter of *Menihard*,Earle of *Tirol*,and sister by the mothers side to *Conrade* late Duke of *Sweuia*. In shew cauelling at this noble Lady,as an implacable persecutrix of Clergy men against Gods commandements, but in truth, most barbarously enuying her in memory of her brother and her deceased Aunce stors , for their claming and retaining of their hereditary royalties against the vsurpations of the former Bishops. Let the world be Iudge,if they continue not the like, yea the very same stratagems, against all Princes at this day,if they but crosse their ambitions . The man that feareth God would think, that a good and a vertuous life,especially in a Prince, should warrant his daies from vexation,

Naucl.gen.44.

and

and his graue from infamy. But here you ſee the contrary : *Albert* followeth the ſteps of his father; he is humble, in offenſiue, glad to pleaſe, yet not well requited: His Lady neither medleth nor maketh with theſe contentious perſons, and yet in regard that her Auncеſters diſpleaſed the Roman prelacie, ſhee ſauoreth; and muſt be diſgraced in moſt opprobrious manner: yea the depth of the graue can not ſecure her honorable friends from railing, ſo furious is the fire of a Popiſh conſcience. *Doct. B. fo. 68. S. E. H. fo. 48.*

No maruell: for this is that *Boniface* the eight, who (like the Diuell in the Goſpell) cenſured all principalities and powers to bee in his donation ; who vſurped vpon both ſwords, and would needs haue inforced the whole world, to haue acknowledged him their Lord Peramount: glorying that to him were committed the keies of Heauen gate: That he ought to be iudged of no man, no though hee carried a million of ſoules with him to hell for company.

Henricus Septimus.

Hee raigned Anno 1308. *About the ſecond yeere of* Edward *the ſecond.*

AFter the deccaſe of *Albert*, *Henrie* of that name the ſeuenth, of the Houſe of *Lucelburge*, by the lawfull ſuffrage of the Electors, is nominated Emperor. *Clement* the fift (then High-Prieſt) liuing at *Auignion*, (well fare the iarre betweene him and *Philip* the French King) *in* *Mutius lib.* 23.

odium Philippi, gaue ſo courteous and facil a way vnto this election, that ſending his Legats through all the quarters of *Germanie* and *Italie*, hee gaue ſtrict commandement, that *Henry* ſhould be acknowledged Emperor, and really confirmed in the election; prouided that, within the ſpace of two yeares, hee ſhould come to *Rome* to be crowned, and perſonally viſit *Italy*, which now by reaſon of ſixty yeares abſence of the *Germane Emperours*, was miſerably afflicted with inteſtine diſſenſions.

But the Pope could not long be Maſter of his own breaſt, hee muſt needes follow the accuſtomed knauerie of his vafrous predeceſſours. For when *Henrie*, in ſatisfaction of his promiſes, had made his perambulation throughout euerie Prouince of *Italie*; had wice rowted *Rupert* King of *Apulia* with the *Vrſins*; approached *Rome*, and expected his *Coronation* in the Cathedrall Church of Saint *Peter*: The Pope, repenting him of his forwardneſſe, by calling to minde of *Henries* powerfulneſſe, and *Ruperts* friendſhip, at firſt commandeth the Cardinals not to proceede to *Henries* inauguration; and then againe vpon the Emperours ſerious expoſtulation, changing his interdiction; hee aſſenteth, conditionally, that hee take an oath of fidelity to the ſea of Saint *Peter*.

Which when his Maieſtie refuſed, alleadging the preſident to be new, and but lately vſurped in the dayes of ſome fewe of his Predeceſſours, *That the chiefeſt Prince of Chriſtendome ſhould be obliged by an oath of fealtie to the ſeruant of ſeruants* at laſt with much adoe

a-doe, but vtterly against the Popes minde, by the loyall seruice of *Steuen* of *Colonna*, he was crowned by the Cardinals. For, *Clement* himselfe in deadlie hatred against Him, reuolted to *Rupert* King of *Apulia*, by a lawfull triall condemned of high treason; and reuersed his sentence of condemnation, not so much for any defect in Law, but in extreame malice against his Maiestie. *Cuspinian.* *Vide C. pastoralis, de sententia & re iudicat. in Clement.*

Thus was the quarrell pickt against *Henry*; obserue the cause thereof, I beseech you, and tell me if the president hold not with their practises at this day. But by the suddaine and immature departure of this religious Emperor, nothing was effected.

For, *Henrie* now being resolued to take vpon him the Crowne of *Sicilie*, being thereunto nominated by the *Sicilians*, vpon the vigil of the Assumption of our Lady was come as farre as *Bonconuent*: Where, by *Bernard* the false dominican Monke, who before times had giuen many hypocriticall testimonies of seruice towards his Maiestie, by a new and neuer heard of example, at Masse mingled poison, and the powder of Adamant (which as men say bringeth speediest death) into the communion cup, and so slew his Lord and soueraigne. *Rhithmi de morte Henrici impressi hunc proditorem veneficum Paulinum vocant.*

All the wakes, Annals, records, songs, rithmes, verses and Epigrams written in those daies, doe make ample relation of this tragedy. But the whole *Rabble* (and blame them not) of the *Dominicans* do vtterlie deny it; giuing out, that in griefe of mind, for that he could not be fully reuenged vpon his enemies, hee gaue vp the ghost, after he had receiued letters from his Holinesse

in teſtimoniall of this afore-ſaid villaines innocencie. But howeuer; Theſe faire gloſſes could not ſo exempt their *Order* from the ſuſpition of this murder, but that many of their Couent, together with their houſes were burnt and deſtroyed by ſword and fire in manie places throughout *Tuſcanie* and *Lombardy*.

Lodouicus Bauarus.

He raigned Anno 1314. *About the ſeuenth yeare of* Edward *the ſecond.*

HEnry (laſt ſpoken of) being thus diſpatched, the tempeſt which in his life time lay ſmothered in embers, in hideous maner now breaketh out vpon the head of his ſucceſſors. For *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, and *Lewes* of *Bauaria* being both by the diſcordant ſuffrages of the Electors, named for *Cæſars*, *Iohn* the 22. findeth an occaſion to diſquiet them both; and firſt in very ignominious faſhion hee quarelleth with *Frederick*. And thus it fared: *Conrade* the Biſhop of *Gurcia* was ſent to *Rome* by the *Auſtrians*, to deſire his Holineſſe in fauour of *Frederick*, to giue aſſent to the election, and to repreſſe *Lewes*; where, in making his Oration, he chanced to diſcourſe, vpon the praiſes of *Frederick* his grandfathers and great-grandfathers, concluding, that the Chriſtian world was likely to reape nothing contrarie to expectation, conſidering, *That it was alwaies ſeene, that from good and valiant Parents, diſcended*

diſcended good and valiant children; yet by your fauour, moſt arrogantly and impertinently replied his Holineſſe; *Of all men liuing without queſtion* Salomon *was the wiſeſt, and yet he begot a ſonne moſt fooliſh.* Not obſcurely intimating thereby, that *Frederick* was degenerated from the vertues of his auncestors, and therefore vnworthy of the Imperiall diademe.

VVas this diſpleaſure, deeme yee, of continuance? no ſurely; for then had it not beene papall. But at that time *Iohn* had no neede of *Fredericke*: *Lewes* Iudas-like was ſaluted King, *and the beloued ſonne*: But now *Mapheus* with his ſonnes the *Viſconti*, are vp in *Italy*, and aſſaulting *Genoa*. And thereupon muſt a league of reconciliation be priuily contracted with *Frederick* to the expulſion of *Lewes*, and the re-ordering of *Mapheus*.

Eight yeares after his election, *Frederick* was foiled in field, and taken priſoner: Howbeit, the Pope proſecuteth *Lewes* with continuall malice; denounceth him an Enemie to the Church, a Schiſmatike, and an Heretike; Firſt, for that immediatly vpon his Election, without his Holineſſe permiſſion, hee had ſtiled himſelfe Emperour; ſecondly, for that hee preſumed to relieue certaine of his yonger bretheren being condemned of hereſie, and outlawed after excommunication; and thirdly, for his raſh aſſiſtance ſent to *Galeas Viſconti of Millan* againſt his holy-forces. *Cuſpin. in vita Ludouici Pulchri. Naucl. gen. 46.*

Whereupon *Lewes*, vnderſtanding by the beſt Diuines and Lawyers of that age, that the acts and ſayings of *Iohn* were repugnant to Chriſt his Doctrine: That the Pope in truth ought to be ſubiect to the Emperor, and not the Emperor to him in temporall cauſes: *Naucl. gen. 45.*

ſes: tooke thereat ſuch incouragement, that, he appealed from the Pope *male informato* (as the Lawyers ſpeake) to the Pope *melius informando*, at the next generall Councel to be held, when he ſate at Rome in *Peters* chaire. Meane time, valiantly and vigilantly hee preuenteth all iniuries, and diuulgeth the Tenor of the *Appeale* throughout all the Prouinces of *Germany*.

During theſe verball and ſcribeling contentions, it came to paſſe, that the Romans being throughly tormented with their ciuill diſſentions, ſent their ſubmiſſiue Orators to *Iohn*, with humble ſupplications to intreat his Holineſſe; that leauing *Auignion*, he would re-uiſite Rome, and confer the Imperial Inueſtiture vpon the King of Romans: this if he refuſed, they certified him in plaine termes, that they would renue the ancient Lawes and gouernment of the Romane people. *Iohn* not only denieth their requeſts, but with threats and minaces, in moſt ignominious maner diſmiſſeth the Orators: At which his pride the Romans being not a little offended, by letters and Ambaſſies call *Lewes* to *Rome* as their lawfull Emperor.

Lewes granteth the motion, and with his army taketh his way towards *Italy*; and at *Millan* according to the accuſtomed manner is crowned by the Archbiſhop. After this, making choice rather by humility, then armes, to aſſwage the Biſhops wrath, he ſendeth meſſengers vnto him, humbly to deſire his fatherhood to confer the vſuall and Imperiall honours vpon his Maieſty. Which when the Biſhop not only gainſayd, but deſpighteouſly diſmiſſing his Ambaſſadors, peremptorily cited his Maieſty to *Auignion*; As report goeth: *Cæſar* as hauing full experience of the Papall tyranny,

tyranny, yet willing to preſerue the Imperiall dignity (collated from aboue) holy and inuiolable, vtterly refuſeth ſlaue-like to proſtrate himſelfe before the Pope, or to appeare at *Auignion*. But to auoid the effuſion of blood, he is content in peaceable maner by proxy to become a ſutor for his collation. But herein finding the Pope as ſtiffe as himſelfe, and his friendes the *Viſconti* to his diſgrace alreadie accurſed, he maketh no more adoe; but ſetting *Millane* in order, he iourneyeth to Rome, where with great applauſe by the commaundement of the people and the Clergie, together with his wife hee is Crowned by Cardinall *Steuen Colonna*, the whole Nobility aſſiſting, and crying, *GOD ſaue Lodowicke Auguſtus Emperour of Romanes*. And foorthwith by all their good liking, he createth *Peter of Corbar*, a Minorit, a man learned and in-ured to Gouernement, High Prieſt: Hee cauſeth the counterfet of *Iohn* to be made in wood, and in the preſence of *Cæſar* moſt ignominiouſly conſumeth it to aſhes; pronouncing him an *Heretique*, *a deſtroier* of the Church, and a *publique enemy* to the peace of Chriſtendome.

Iohn again, thundreth out cruell proceſſe againſt *Lewes*, depriueth him of all imperiall preheminence, and excommunicateth him as a Rebell and Arch-heritique againſt the Roman Church. Wherupon the Emperor, to whom *Italy* became diſpleaſãt, partly for that he had already determined to make no long abode therein, & partly in feare of poiſon, wherwith he knew the Romaniſts were better acquainted, then with arms, made his retrait into *Germany*. Whether (no ſooner ariued) but newes was ſpred abroad of *Iohns* departure, to the vni-

uerſall ioy of all wel-minded Chriſtians, in hope that by the election of a new Biſhop, all old quarrels ſhould lie buried with their framer. But not ſo: For *Benedict* the twelfth ſucceeding in the Popedom, ſucceeded alſo in all Popiſh qualities againſt this Emperor; confirming all the cenſures, and depriuations which his predeceſſor *Iohn* had ſued out againſt him.

Plati. in vita Benedict. 12. Cuſp. in vita Ludouici.

Whereupon, *Cæſar* perceiuing that theſe fiery ſpirits would neuer be at peace, vntill by the vtter ouerthrow and diſgrace of all temporall Authority, they had fully and forceably ſtrengthned their owne greatneſſe, at *Franckford* he aſſembleth the Princes, with the wiſe-men of his Kingdom; perſons of immatcheable dexterity in diuine and humane ſciences; and there, by the aduiſe of the moſt zealous and beſt learned, hee publiſheth a Decree vnder his ſeale againſt the iniurious proceſſe of the dead Biſhop: therein rendring a moſt Chriſtianlike account of his faith, plainly & ingenuouſly confeſſing, that as it became a true Catholike he beleeued all the Articles of the Chriſtian veritie.

Apud. Na Decretum hoc extat gen. 45.

To theſe by ſolemne proclamation hee annexeth many notable edicts, to the ancient Conſtitutions he addeth ſome new, and corroborateth the old, viz. *That the Electors of the Empire, and no man beſides, ſhould intermeddle in the election of the King of Romans:* Whereunto the Princes and nobility gaue their full conſent: Ordaining moreouer, that *who euer was nominated King or Emperor, ſhould be acknowledged for the true, ſupreme, and indubitate Soueraign of the Empire,* being indeed though diffetent in name, yet the ſame in effect. *That without any confirmation or approbation from the Apoſtolique ſea, he might abſolutely gouerne and adminiſter iuſtice throughout*

out the Empire. And that after publication from the Princes, in caſe of lawfull proceeding in the election, the Pope is bound to anoint him: And in defalt of refuſall or denial, that any other catholique Biſhop is as capable as the Pope, to proclaime him Emperor, Cæſar, Auguſtus; Conſidering that theſe formal and ſolemne ceremonies, are but things indifferent deuiſed by the Popes, conferring only titles and names, but no matter of ſubſtance. For what Roman Biſhop conſecrated the Conſtantinopolitan Emperors? what Pope before *Charles* his time, the ancient *Auguſti*? or who before *Conſtantine* the Ethnike *Cæſars*? And then, the Emperor acknowledged no oth of fidelity, but of obſeruancy and of defending the faith.

From this point, he proceedeth to prooue, that in caſe of vacancy, the Imperial election diuolueth not to the Papacy: and that, the preſcription is derogatory to the liberty, dignity, the rites and maieſty of the ſacred Empire, but in truth by long and aprooued cuſtome from Antiquity, and ſtil in vſe, that all Iudicature, fealties and priuiledges of conferring and diſpoſing of all rights, intereſts, & demands, belonged & do belong to the Houſe of the *Count Palatine of the Rhene*, during the vacancy, notwithſtanding the conſtitutions of the *Clementines*.

What pen can be ſo partiall, as not to giue due commendation to the prudency of this good Emperor, being ſeaſoned with ſo plentifull a meaſure of diſcretion? who ſo modeſtly carried himſelfe between the Princes & the Pope, that the former admired his wiſedom, and the later celebrated his goodneſſe? For in *Benedicts* prime-entrance into the pontificacy, vpon occaſion of diſcontents between his holineſſe and the French king *Naucl. gen. 45.*

his Maieſtie vnderſtanding therof, by meanes made for reconciliation and abſolution, vnto which the Biſhop, after hee had entered into a large field of diſcourſe in praiſe of *Germany* and this Emperour, condiſcended; promiſing to be mindfull of the motion; concluding, *That that Noble branch of the Church* (meaning *Lewes*) *which now began to be ſeperated, ſhould again be re-ingrafted into the body of the tree.*

Vpõ another occaſion, when the Embaſſadors of the kings of *France* and *Apulia*, had ſcandalized his Maieſtie for plotting of diuers indignities againſt the Court of *Rome*: his Holines excuſed him with great earneſtnes, openly auouching, that *the Clergie had wronged him, and not he the Clergie.*

Naucl. vbi ſupra.

But howeuer, at this time he acknowledged the innocencie of *Lewes*, yet afterwards, when the king of *France* in deſpight of the Emperor & the Pope, had ſlily preuented the returne of certaine Cardinals into his kingdom; and that *Iohn* king of *Bohemia*, & *Henry* Duke of *Bauaria*, had traiterouſly cõſpired to elect a new Emperor, he ſuffered himſelfe with ſmall intreaty to be diſſwaded from his former reſolution of Abſolution: yea, after the king of *France* & his Maieſtie had capitulated a peace, full ſore againſt his mind; vpon requeſt to haue it ratified by his Holines, he flatly denied it; cauelling, that *Lewes* being now declared an heretike, ought not again to be accounted a Chriſtian at the kings pleſure.

Thus may you ſee how the Popes were accuſtomed to play faſt and looſe with the German Emperors.

Cuſpin. Marius.

Well, the Abſolution by this nicity being adiourned, and the Emperor well obſeruing wherunto theſe pontifical policies tended, ſummoneth the Princes and

Electors

Electors to a Diet at *Renſium*. There with eaſe, by his affability, liberality and clemency, he ſo deuoteth their loyalties to his ſeruice, that by ſolemne oath they not onely auow to maintaine and defend the honor of the Empire: but they alſo decreed, the Proceſſes of *Iohn* late Pope of *Rome*, returned againſt his Maieſtie, to be void and of no validity: yea, that a Biſhop ought not to entertaine any ſuch practiſes againſt an Emperour, for that their iuriſdictions were meerly of diſtinct natures.

Benedict dieth, & *Clement* the 6. ſucceedeth: an effeminat Prelat, extraordinarily ambitious of honor & potencie. Who had no ſooner ſeated his foot in the chair of Lucifer, but his furious *Genius* took ſuch hold of his hart, that in Latin & Dutch libels affixed vpon church dores, he ſummoneth his Maieſtie vnder the cenſure of extream penãce, within three daies ſpace to make ſatiſfaction, to God & the church (meaning himſelf) as alſo to deſiſt frõ further medling in the affaires of the Empire; which limitation being expired, & no appearance recorded, he proceedeth to ſentence of cõtumacie. Afterwards, whẽ his Proctors craued forgiuenes, with an offer to performe all iniunctions to vtmoſt: he was not aſhamed to motion ſo foule an attonement, as neuer Pagan demanded of his Captiue ſlaue: *viz. That hee ſhould confeſſe and acknowledge all his errors and hereſies. That he ſhould reſigne the Empire: and ſimply commit his children, and all his moueables into his tuition.* *Cuſpin. & Paralip. Vrſperg.*

Where is now become, O Lucifer, thy paſtoral humility? where thy fatherly aſpect? where thy repreſentatiue Holineſſe?

Notwithſtanding, albeit the pooreſt refuſe of the world would not haue accepted of theſe baſeſt condi-

tions, yet this good Emperour, fore-seeing, that if he should not bend; warre, slaughter & spoiles would ensue, he receiued the pontificall libell; signed it with his seale, and swore to obserue it; so farre forth humiliating his deiection, that vpon relation thereof, the whole Colledge of the scarlet-roabed-fathers could not chuse but receiue it with vnaccustomed admiratiõ.

But the Emperor vpon sounder aduice, considering with himselfe, that without the consent of the Electors, and of the Princes & the estates of the Empire, it was against the fundamentall Law to accept of any such Capitulation, in the next assembly at *Frankford*, hee causeth the tenor of the reconciliation to be read before the whole Assembly. They giue sentence, that it tendeth in most points to the preiudice and destruction of the state, and therefore reiect it: They promise to stand fast vnto his Maiestie; in case, as before, he would re-assume his courage, and resolutely defend the honour of the Empire. And to conclude, they dispatch an Embassie to the Pope, with intimation, that from thence-forth he should cease from such friuolous conuentions, being purposely deuised to dishonour the Maiestie of the German Empire.

They arriue before his Holinesse; they expostulate the rigour of the Articles to the preiudice of the Empire: nothing else they inforce, nothing else they demand: But his Holinesse inraged like an illuded Tigresse; layeth all the blame vpon *Lewes*, & with deeper hart-burning then before, falleth into treatie with *Iohn* and *Charles* Kings of *Bohemia*, heretofore ouerthrowne by *Lewes*, and with their vncle *Baldwin*, Archbishop of *Treuers*, to destoy *Lewes* and his whole posterity.

The

The bargaine agreed vpon by theſe Pſeudo Chriſtians, in the yeare of our Sauiour 1346. vpon Maundy-Thurſday, hee is moſt irreligiouſly accurſed by *Benedict*; and by the renouation of the Proceſſe (ſent out by his predeceſſour *Iohn*) declared an Heretique and ſciſmatique.

To aggrauate the deſpight, and by effects to ſhew the ſolidity of his religion, hee commandeth the Electors within a proportioned time, to make choiſe of another. Loe, the Emperor rather then he will be an inſtrument of ſlaughter and faction, diſgraceth his high calling by acceptance of baſeſt articles; but the Pope rather then he will want of his will, *vnico flatu* (as the prouerb is) will depoſe, ſet vp, commend, diſpraiſe, bleſſe and curſe; and without all reſpects, either of conſcience or humanity, ſet all Chriſtendome on outrage, to be reuenged on one creature. Were this the practiſe but of One, the imputation were excuſable, as a defect in manners, but through the whole Legend of euery Emperours life, you ſhall obſerue the one abſtinent, yea timorous, for conſcience ſake to defile euen his imaginations with humane blood: the other rigorous, wrathfull, impatient, and quarrelſome: ſomtime vpon donatiues, ſometime vpon *iura imperij*, and ſometimes vpon non augmenting of Saint *Peters* patrimonie. Which irreligious and Antichriſtian outrages, albeit they know them in their conſciences to be abſolutely diabolicall, repugnant to Chriſtian Doctrine, and pernicious to all ciuill ſociety, yet rather then any Pope or Popeling will let fall any one particle of vnlawfull vſurpation, gained by any the wickedeſt of his predeceſſours, words and workes ſhall flie at

randon

randon vpon euery occaſion,ſo that it would amaze a very Turke to heare with what ſhifts,with what euaſions, and diſtinctions of *ſpiritualia*, they will ſtuffe whole volumes in iuſtifying of their falſifications, in wreſting and curtailing of Authors,in denying manifeſt Records,in railing on their oppoſites,and preſſing mens conſciences with miracles,policies, and impoſtures.Inſomuch,that if words will not worke, impoſtures ſhall ſeduce ; if impoſtures prooue fruitleſſe, ſwords ſhall walke,if ſwords be preuented, then poiſons and treaſonable practiſes ſhall put end to the controuerſie. Blood muſt ſatiate,or the Church cannot be ſatisfied.

But to our Hiſtory: The Electors haue a peremptory day giuen them,againſt which if they produce not their Anti-emperor,the Pope proteſteth by no irreligious reliques,that rather then the Church ſhall want a Lieuetenant,an Aduocate(Himſelfe muſt bee Captaine and chiefe Iuſtice)hee will ſet vp One of his ſole Election. Well, oaths muſt be kept inuiolable,eſpecially with traitors,and ſo doth his Holineſſe. And thus he beginneth his web. *Henrie* of *Wittenberg* Archbiſhop of *Mogunce*,and one of the electors, for his loiall adherency vnto his Lord and maſter, to curry fauour with the Bohemians,he depriueth of all his eccleſiaſticall and temporall capacities,and into his place he intrudeth *Gerlace* his Chaplein,the Nephew of *Adolph* of *Naſſaw*,once King of Romans. This new Papall Biſhop in ſatiſfaction of his Lord and maſters expectation,and in requitall of like office towards the Bohemians for their choice and election,vpon the aſſembly of the Princes at *Renſium*, for the nomination of a new

Emperor,

Emperor, worketh with *Baldwin* of *Treuers*, *Walram* of *Colein*, *Rodulph* Duke of *Saxonie*, and *Iohn* the father a Bohemian, to nominate and elect *Charles* King of *Bohemia* for ſupreme Lord of the Empire.

But for all this; albeit *Charles* in the life time of *Lewes* was crowned at *Bonna*, yet ſuch was his reputation, and ſuch the affection of all the good townes through the Empire towards his ſeruice, that vpon a conuocation of a Diet, and that after the coronation of *Charles*; No one of the Princes was found, either to ſecond the election, or to regard the Popes Breues, or to ſwarue from their promiſed fidelity. *Paralip. Vrſp.*

Had he beene a Popelike Prince; that is, If to worke his will, he would haue hazarded his Title vpon warre and bloodſhed, what could hee not haue performed. But beeing of a quite contrary diſpoſition, and guided by the beſt ſpirits of vnpartiall Prechers, he neuer began a warre againſt any man, though prouoked, but onely for the quiet and honour of his country; And in deteſtation of ſlaughter, reſolued with himſelfe neuer to determine a quarrel by warre, if any ſecondarie meanes might finiſh it by peace; and therefore betaking himſelfe to his quieteſt diſpoſitions, by the trechery of *Clement* (as ſome Authors report) he was poyſoned at a meriment, and after as he rode on hunting, as ſoon as by labor and the motion of his beaſt his blood heated, hee fell headlong from horſebacke. Thus, moſt vnworthyly was this Emperor to the griefe of all good Chriſtians made away, in the ſecond yeere after the election of *Charles*, the fift of the Ides of October, in the yeere of Grace 1347. after hee had ſo honourably gouerned the Empire for the ſpace of thirty and three

yeeres, that thoſe good ſpirits who all his life time had adminiſtred vnto him true and loyall ſeruice againſt al Papiſticall malediction, now after his death with like conſtancy and honeſty defended his neuer dying memory, againſt all *Shemeis* poſterity; as at this day it is apparantly ſeen, not only by record of hiſtory, but alſo by the particular letters of the Conſul of *Baſil.*

Par. ap. vrſp. Naucl. gen. 45.

And thus it is: the Biſhop of *Bamberg* (by vertue of a commiſſion directed vnto him from *Auignion* by the Popes authority, to abſolue as many as adhered vnto *Lewes*) the yeere following the death of *Lewes*, iournied with *Charles* towards *Baſil*: At his ariuall he made a very perſwaſiue ſpeech to induce the Inhabitants, ſithence they ſtood excommunicated in the behalfe of *Lewes* for aſſiſting his party, with all humility to demand abſolution: vnto whome *Conradus* of *Bernsfield*, the Maior of the City, in the preſence of *Charles*, and the reſt of the nobility, as well ſecular as eccleſiaſticall, made this reſolute reply: *Lord of Bamberg, know, that we will neither confeſſe nor beleeue, that our Soueraigne Lord* Lewes, *Emperor of Romans, was euer an Heretique: But howeuer; whomſoeuer the Electors ſhall impoſe vpon vs for our Maſter, him onely wee acknowledge, without asking leaue of the Pope.*

Surely as this Heroique ſpeech of the Conſul, ſhewed the Chriſtianlike courage of the man, in attributing due obedience to his lawfull Soueraigne, and may to future ages be a teſtimony of innocency proteſted, and in meere loue and admiration of vertue: ſo without queſtion this noble and worthy Emperour deſerued no leſſe, if the whole impartiall world were to returne a Iury vpon the paſſage of his intire life:

being

being doubtleſſe an honeſt man, vnſpotted, ſtudious of his countries freedome, and onely a ſeuere opugner of the Romiſh tyranny: ſo far foorth, that without exception, he is to be remembred with all thoſe ſtiles of Honor, which are accuſtomed to be inſtiled vpon thoſe, who for the loue of their countries, haue refuſed to vndergoe no difficult perills.

Charles the fourth.

He raigned in the yeere 1346. *About the twentieth yeare of* Edward *the third.*

LEWES being dead, *Charles* after he had by diuerſe meanes appeaſed the competitors oppoſed againſt him by the electors of *Mogunce*, the *Palatine*, the *Saxon*, and the *Brandeburgean*, is at laſt vpon promiſe that he ſhould procure abſolution for the free Cities (yet ſtanding excommunicated for their adherence vnto *Lewes*) crowned Emperor, and on his iourny towards *Italie*; but there entertained with more diſgrace, then any of his predeceſſors. For as on foot he entred the City, Behold (quoth a certaine Senator) in his Oration before the people in the Capitol) *thy King commeth towards thee in great humility*; very bitterly taunting him with ſcoffes and reuilements. Inſomuch that the Cardinall of *Hoſtia*, ſent from *Auignion* by *Innocent* the ſixt, would not condiſcend to Crowne him, before he had giuen ſecurity to

remaine in *Rome* nor in *Italy*, no longer then the buſineſſe imported.

How baſe and ignominious this limitation was to the Honour of the Empire, is apparantly to be diſcerned by the Epiſtles of *Francis Petrarch*, (that moſt learned and eloquent Poet) written vnto *Charles* himſelfe in theſe wordes. *I knowe not what this promiſe made and ſworne to the Romane Biſhop meaneth, as if your Maieſties entrance into the Citie, had beene gaine-ſaid by ſome inexpugnable trench, or impaſſable mountaine: what manner of pride is this, that the Romane Prince, the life and fountaine of liberty, ſhould himſelfe be depriued of liberty; ſo farre forth, that he who ought to be Lord of all, can not be ſaid to be Lord of himſelfe?*

And in another place, *Nerio* of *Friuli*, in his writings, doth not much diſſent. *All ſuperiority is impacient of corriualty: whereof, if antiquity can not giue vs preſidents, I feare that late examples will make the caſe frequent. For now* (as fame goeth) *the Pope of* Rome *hath forbidden the Romane Prince*, Rome: *whom hee not onely ſuffereth, but alſo commandeth, to be contented with the diadem, and ſole title of the Romane Empire. Him, whom he ſuffereth to be Emperour, at no hand will he ſuffer to enioy* Emperie.

As the cowardize of *Charles*, in diſſembling his greeuances againſt this propagating pride of the prelacie, is with iuſt cauſe to be complained of. No leſſe are the Popes worthy of eternall reprehenſion, who for their proper reſpects in depoſing of good & godly Emperors, ſubſtituted in their places ſuch Miniſters whoſe mindes they knew were alwaies prepared to ſatisfie their beheſts by warre and bloud-ſhed, moſt wickedly

kedly & feloniouſly impoſing vpon the Empire thoſe loſſes and diſgraces, wherewith at this day wee ſee it weakned and generally taxed.

For ſurely this *Charles*, to inable his proiects to appeaſe his Competitors; to diſpoſe of the reuenues of the Crowne at his pleaſure; and freely to beſtow them where he thought good, gaue vnto *Gunther* Earle of *Swatzburg*, a valiant and warlike Leader, and by the Electors ſaluted for Emperor 22. thouſand markes of ſiluer, with two Imperiall Cities in *Thuringe* for the terme of his life. *Cuſpin. in vita Guntheri.*

Vnto *Frederick* Marques of *Miſnia*, elected in ſtead of *Schwatzburge* deceaſed, he gaue ten thouſand marks, to reſigne his nomination; and then prepared for his iourney towards *Rome*. *Idem in vita Caroli.*

From whence eſcaping, by an excuſe of going on hunting, in as diſhonorable a manner, as neuer any of his predeceſſors before, hee returned to *Millan*, and there created the *Viſconti* (a Potent family in that Citie) in receit of a wonderfull maſſe of mony, *perpetuall Vicars of the Empire* throughout *Lombardy*, to the euerlaſting diſhonor and preiudice of *Germanie*. *Auont. li. 7.*

For a ſumptuous banquet in *Ville-noue* neere *Auignion*, hee re-deliuered to the King of *France*, the Kingdome of *Arles*, acquired to the Empire by *Otho* the firſt.

From *Gerlace*, Archbiſhop of *Mogunce*, though by his partiality hee gained his election, hee wreſted the priuiledge of inaugurating the Kings of *Bohemia*, in right belonging to the Church of *Mogunce*, and by cõfirmation of *Clement* the ſixt, inueſted it in the Archbiſhop of *Prage*. *Theodor. de Nyem.*

Zeigl. de viris illuſtribus Germaniæ. ca. 91.

Krant. li. 1. c. 3. Tritemius in Cron. Hirſang.

He ordained by law, that none but *Bohemians* ſhould be admitted into the Colledge of the Canons regular of *Inglehame*, being of the Dioces of *Mogunce*. And preſently after to make quick and profitable returnes of the profits of the Empire, hee retailed vnto the adioyning Princes ſixteene free Cities of *Sweuia*, all held of the Crowne. To *Cunon* Archbiſhop of *Treuers*, he pawned *Bopardia* and *Weſel* (Imperiall Cities) by ſtatute.

Aeneas Siluius ca. 3. Inſt. Bohemic.

Luſatia, which time out of minde, had beene held in fee of the Imperiall diademe by the Archbiſhops of *Magdeburg*, by the corruption of the then Incumbent, he perpetuated vnto the kingdome of *Bohemia*.

De his & alijs quam plurimis prolixè vide Theod. de Nyem in nemore ſuo iam edito. c. 71.

Againſt the fundamentall Lawes of the Country, and the cuſtome of Antiquity, by nouell and ſubordinate practiſe, he offered euery Elector (a part) one hundred thouſand Duckets to nominate for his ſucceſſor, his ſonne *Winceslaus*, a man giuen ouer to idleneſſe, cowardize, luxurie, all wantonneſſe and belly-cheere. For which, when this *Phocas* had not wherewith to keepe his dayes of payment, he morgaged for one hundred thouſand duckets, to ſome their Impoſts, and to the *Palatine* (as memory recordeth) *Cæſarea Luthrea, Oppenham, Odenham*, and *Ingelham*. Whereupon I may be bold to ſay, that by theſe diminutions, alienations, and mortgages, the Honourable entrados of the Crowne were ſo immeaſurably waſted, that from that day to this, it hath not beene of power to recouer or reſtore this terrible downefall. For by the ſale of theſe Impoſts (the true and eſſentiall Patrimonie of the Crowne) the glorious Eagle hath beene ſo deplumed, that euer ſince ſhee hath beene but a ſcorne and contempti-

Zeigl. de viris illuſtribus Ger. ca. 83.

temptible to euery other liuing creatures. Which being true (as true it is) what Patriot can but accurse the Romane Bishops, as the sole and prime-authors of all these mischiefes, the children of desolation, and the perpetuall disturbers of all Christian welfare?

Wenceslaus the Coward.

He raigned Anno Christ. 1379. *about the second yeare of* Richard *the second.*

AFter the demise of *Charles*, *Wenceslaus* his sonne, during the schisme betwixt *Vrban* the sixt, and *Clement* the seuenth (then the which a more fatall, bestial, durable dissention neuer befell the Church) gouerned the Empire, and tooke part with *Vrban*. To *Clement* vpon occasion he sendeth his Embassadours; and amongst them, are remembred certaine honest and indifferent Prelates to haue passed, whom by exquisite tortures he slew most barbarously. And as for *Vrban*, for that the couetous King had deceiued the more couetous Romanes, gaping after the treasure raised vpon ecclesiasticall benefices, in not keeping promise with his personall presence, after hee had granted his commission for leuying the saide ecclesiasticall tribute through the whole Empire, towards the defrayment of his charges for his Romane-iourney, he became vtterly alienated from his auncient friendship. But what Death preuented by the death of *Vrban* his successour, *Boneface* *Naucl.gen.47.*

Boneface the ninth being ſure to haue had it, if God had giuen life, made good in higheſt meaſure. For he approouing the cenſure of deiection againſt *Wenceſlaus*, not ſo much for his euil and degenerate life, as for that he had beguiled the Romans of their pence, ratified and aduanced the Election of *Rupert Earle Palatine*, preferred vnto the Empire by the Biſhops of *Mogunce*, *Colen*, and *Treuers*.

Theod. de Nyem. li. 2. ca. 14.

Rupertus Cæſar.

He raigned. 1400.

AS *Boneface* the ninth, in deſpight of *Wenceſlaus*, with great facility and readineſſe approued his depoſition: ſo *Rupert* but now aloft in higheſt fauour of the Pope, at this preſent is ſo counterchecked by this wether-cocke, *Alexander* the fift, the third from *Boneface* (a moſt malicious Cretuſian) that he is very likely to feele the ſmart of as violent a diuiſion in the ſtate, as doth the Church in a preſent and terrible ſchiſme.

Theod. de Nyem. li. 3. ca. 53.

For vpon his very inſtallment at *Piſa* in the *Fiſhers chaire* without any regard either of *Ruperts* right, or his preſent poſſeſſiõ vpon a iuſt title, he nominateth by his miſſiues for King of Romanes, *Wenceſlaus*, the man, whom in a frequent aſſembly, with one conſent the Electors had heretofore remooued from imperiall gouernement.

Which Indignity *Rupert* not being able to diſgeſt, hee made his grieuous complaints thereof vnto the Lords

Lords of the ſtate ; and exceedingly interrupted the obedience of the Church throughout the Empire. And without doubt,he had attempted far greater reformations,had not the ſparkles of theſe ſmoking ſubſtances together with the Prelate,to the general good of Chriſtendom been at one extincted by the Phyſick of *Marſilius* a phyſitian of *Parma*.

And *Rupert* applying his labours to redreſſe what had been amiſſe by the auarice of *Charles*, and the cowardize of *Winceſlaus*,in the tenth yeere of his raigne departed this world. In whoſe place ſucceeded *Sigiſmund*,a Prince for his wiſedom, learning and integrity,moſt renowned.

Sigiſmund.

He raigned 1411. *About the twelfth yeere of* Henry *the fourth.*

SIGISMVND at his entrance vpon the Imperiall Diadem, finding the Romane Sea miſerably diſtracted by the wicked ſchiſme of three Antipopes(*Iohn* the foure and twentieth at *Bononia*,*Gregory* the twelfth at *Arimi-num*, and *Benedict* the 12.in *Spaine*)tooke ſuch infinit paines to reſtore it vnto its priſtinate beauty, as few or none of the auncient kings or Emperors euer vndertook the like, for the welfare of the Church. For albeit of his owne authoritie diueſted vpon himſelfe, and diuolued from his Anceſtors, he might,& ought to haue caſt out theſe boute-feaus of diuiſion;yet made

Naucl. gen.48. Parap.vrſp. Cuſpinian.

he choice in modesty and trueneſſe of Chriſtian piety, rather to redreſſe theſe euils by a Generall Councel, then by the violent meanes of war and blood-ſhed. Which to effect, to his extreame trauaile, danger and expences, he viſited almoſt all the realmes of Chriſtendome, *France*, *Spaine*, and *England*, and there by his godlineſſe and good counſell ſo wrought with the Princes of thoſe kingdomes, that they commended his zeale, allowed his courſe, and promiſed their beſt aſſiſtance.

Platin. in vita Martini quinti, præter alios.

This done, he tooke his iourny towards *Italy*, and dealt with *Iohn* at *Mantua*, to come vnto the Councel at *Conſtance*. The Aſſembly being ſet, ſuch were his feeling perſwaſiues, ſuch his important motiues, as the three Antipopes being condemned to depoſition, hee cauſed *Otho* of *Colonna*, a Roman patrician, by the name of *Martin* the fift, to be preferred to the place by the generall ſuffrage of all the nations there aſſembled. Yea, and to remoue all impediments from retardation of the peace, he ſuffered *Iohn Huſſe* and *Ierome* of *Prage*, men of exquiſit learning and ſingular piety, to be condemned and burned, againſt an oath of ſafe-conducte publiquely allowed them.

But now, let vs go by examination to learne what thankes this godly, zealous, honourable and Chriſtian Emperour receiued at the hands of this Holy-ſeeming Sea, for theſe their ſo infinite benefits. Vpon which I will not ſtand to exemplifie, for that euery weake braine can conceiue, what are the bleſſings of peace, what the fruites of a quieted conſcience, what the rewardes of vnity in religion. But ſurely their retributions were ſuch, as would abſolutely diſhearten any

wiſe

wiſe man, to inable ſuch ingratefull Canoniſts by benefits. Yet will wee take ſo much paine, as to decipher them to our Reader.

No long time after (*Eugenius* the fourth, then Poping it in *Venice*) the Emperour tooke occaſion to go into *Italie* to receiue his Inauguration: where by the way it happened that he countenanced ſomewhat aboue ordinary, *Philip* Duke of *Millan*, at that inſtant warring againſt the Venetians and Florentines. They partly fearing, and partly imagining, that their wills were halfe obtayned, if they might worke the Pope to their faſhion, aduentured, and without oppoſall gained his Fatherhoods good will, to deny the Emperor his lawfull requeſt; and more, adioyned his forces, to make good the paſſage of *Arno* about *Syenna* againſt his Maieſties people. This, you muſt at any hand remember, was the Popes requitall, this their vſuall remunerations, not vnfitly beſeeming their double dealing conſciences. *Plat. in vita Eugenij 4.*

Yet departed his Maieſty not vncrowned, but obſerue I beſeech you, by what practiſes, by what cunning ſleights they proceeded in their ſtate-Houſe. Extraordinary Interceſſion muſt be made; Six months he muſt ſtay at *Siena*, to his infinit expence; who gained by that? And at laſt, muſt he leaue *Rome*, doubt you not, but to *Eugenius* his high content.

And againe, this *Neronian* bloud-thirſting Biſhop, ſom ſhort time after being depoſed, for going about to fruſtrate the decree of the Councel of *Conſtance* (wherby it was inacted, that euery ſeuenth yeare the Biſhops ſhould celebrate a Generall Councell) and to ratifie That of *Baſil*, which *Martin* had ſummoned, and

himselfe authorized; in the daies of *Frederick* the third, he set all *Austria*, on a miserable, woful & lamẽtable cõbustion, by prouoking *Lewes* the sonne of *Charles* king of *France*, then called the *Daulphin*, to infest *Germany* with warre, fire, & famine. For this Prince, at the pleasure of *Eugenius*, endeuoring to make void the Councel of *Basil*, with his *Armeniachs* and souldiers, by cunning, treason, & protestations, possessed himselfe of all the plaine Country, yea, and of some Cities of *Alsatia*, miserably wasting that goodly Prouince, the most fertil mother of grain & wine. That done, he fell to burning the villages, the Mannors & Mansions of citizens, of orphanes and widowes, and therein spared neither Gods Churches nor Monasteries. Hauing put period to wast, but not to cruelty, he returned to *Basil* with 30. thousand Cumbatants, where by the valiancy of three thousand *Heluetians*, charging for their Country, hee was finally slaine, the third part of his lame & maymed Army, scant returning with life into *France*. Such be the successe of all papal entertainment.

Vuimphelingius in Epit. rerum Germanicarum.

Naucl. gen. 49.

Frederick the third.

Hee raigned Anno 1440. *about the eighteenth yeare of Henry the sixth.*

ALbert succeeded *Sigismund*; but hee departing this world within two yeares after his election, the Imperiall diaceme diuolued vpon *Frederick of Austria*; who being

ing by nature a Prince of a clement, milde & peaceable diſpoſition, ſet diligent watch and warde ouer his thoughts, his words, and his actions, not at all to offend theſe hereditarie diſturbers of peace, and perpetuall manaclers of Princes. Yet could hee not fully auoid their croſſings, abate their pride, nor eſcape their plots.

For as in a publique Parliament held at *Mogunce*, he did what he could to corroborat the councell of *Baſil*, held in the yeare of our Lord 1441. which the Pope laboured tooth and naile to diſanul; as alſo, to diminiſh the exactions which by Popiſh iniunctions were leuied vpon the *German* Churches; which to effect, by his letters, hee deſired the king of *France* either to aſſiſt in perſon, or by ſome eminent perſons of his Kingdome: So the Pope, to countermine againſt this lawfull battery of publique triall (for theſe can no more abide it, then Owles can light) tampereth with the *French*, neither to goe himſelfe, nor to ſuffer any other (without his priuity) to appeare as his *Deputie*. Here behold one Popiſh tricke more for the preſent to fruſtrate the intended reformation of a noble & vertuous Emperour. And heereupon followed that wofull *Alſatian* de-population, whereof wee tolde you but now; There is an other tricke complotted, to buſie his head with-all, *viz.* Diuerſion. His owne houſe is on fire, how can hee then attend the quenching of his neighbours?

Epiſt. extat. in fine clemangis in faſciculo rerum repetundarum ante aliquot annos Coloniæ impreſſa.

VVork layd out on another frontier by the Court of Rome, when reformation is ſpoken of.

And albeit, that *hee* outliued three ſucceſſiue Biſhops, & during their liues, caried himſelf ſo modeſtly and benignly towards them, that nothing was attempted by them againſt his Dignity; & yet hoped for grea-

ter contentments by the rising of *Pius* the second to the Papacie, his auncient seruant and Minister: Notwithstanding, this his trusty friend being once seated, without acquainting the Emperour, made no scruple to accurse his kinsman, *Sigismund Archduke of Austria*, and to entangle *Germanie* with intestine diuisions. As thus.

Sigismund, after long controuersying, and nothing preuailing, being vnwilling that the people vnder his tuition, should still stand exposed to the deprædations of the *Romanists*, in a bickering of Horse-men, chanced to take prisoner, and imprisoned, *Nicholas Cusanus*, by the Pope sent into *Tirol*, to ransack the Bishoprick of *Brixia*: The Bishop censuring him at no lesse a crime then high treason, committed against one of his creatures, enioyneth him greeuous punishments, from which his trustinesse could not be wooed to absolue him, no not at the intercession of *Cæsar*, vntill *Pluto* himselfe came a messenger to release him from his papall obstinacie.

His owne *Creatures* report, that neither the threats, nor the intreaties of Princes or communalties could any whit terrifie him, but in extreame and insatiable prowling for mony, he was ready to accurse and prosecute with warre, as many as any way offered to gainsay his intendments.

Vide Paralip. Vrsp. Munster. in Cosmog. Nauel. in vlt. gen.

Theodorick Erbach, Archbishop of *Mogunce* being dead, *Diether Erusburg* was preferred to his place. This man, for that Annats and first fruites had beene abolished and condemned in the Councel of *Basil*, refused to pay to Saint *Peter* for bestowing the Pall vpon him, those twenty thousand, sixe hundred and fifty duckets

of

of the Rhene, which his Holineſſe by preſcription adiudged to be due vnto him. *Pius* was not a little moued at the refuſall; denieth him confirmation, and beſtowed the Incumbencie vpon *Adolph of Naſſau* (not for loue towards the one belieue it, nor for eſpeciall deſert in the other) but for that hee was honourably allied, and able by friends to become maſter of the poſſeſſion. *Note.*

Diether valiantly reſiſteth his Deiection, & amongſt many others, by large and bountifull entertainment draweth *Henry* the Palatine, and *Frederick* of *Bamberg*, to take part in his quarrell: All *Germanie* is vp in faction, and the principall perſonages therein ingaged, to their notable loſſe and conſumption. For, *Charles* Marques of *Baden*, *George* Biſhop of *Meten*, & *Vlrich* Earle of *Wittemberg*, of the faction of *Adolph*, in a notable incounter neere *Sechenham*, are rowted, ſlaine, captiuated, and impriſoned in the Caſtle of *Heydelberge*. From whence they could not be deliuered, before that *Baden* had payed one hundred thouſand Florins; *Meten* forty fiue thouſand, and *Wittemberg* as many, as the *Marques*. And for further gratuity, they were faine either to add, or to releaſe to the *Palatine*, other royalties of equall value vnto their ranſomes.

At this misfortune of his friends, who maketh any doubt, but that *Pius* was exceedingly agreeued? wherupon, as the bruſed viper, hee addreſſeth his querimonious letters vnto *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, concerning the miſerable eſtate of his partakers; a Prince as truly wiſe, as valiant in armes. Him hee nominateth *Captaine* of the Warre, and intreateth his aſſiſtance againſt the *Palatine*, *Diether*, the Earle of *Catzenelboge*, and *Note againe.*

and their adherents. But *Philip* in his high wiſedom, either miſliking the burthē of this war, or by the temporizing awkwardnes of the Pope too-long deferring his reſolue; meane while, by the treaſon of two Citizens, *Mogunce* was ſurpriſed by *Scaludo* in the night & by *Lodowic Niger Palatin*, the Earle of *Vold*, and other of their complices in the behalfe of *Adolph*. Who put it to ſack, and fire; ſlew fiue hundred of the Citizens, and reduced it into perpetuall ſeruitude. So that this noble Dioceſſe, what by the ſales, the alienations, and the mortgages, of the dorps, villages and burroughs, euen to this very day feeleth, and ſmarteth for the outrages of this papall warre.

This was one of *Pius* his good deeds; Rather then his auaricious Cofers would forbeare to in-exhauſt *Germanie* of her treaſure, hee cared not into what diſtreſſes he caſt the Princes, the people, and the Cities of the kingdom.

But as this ſecond *Impius* dealt with the Princes; So did his ſucceſſor, a Venetian, *Paulus* the ſecond (and worſe) with his Maieſty. For after the taking of *Conſtantinople*, *Frederick* made his ſecond iourny to *Rome*, on purpoſe to deliberate with *Paul* about an expedition againſt the Turks, To the accelerating wherof, for that the Princes through their mutuall diſcontents were much deiected in courage, he praied his Holineſſe in perſon to beare him company into *Germanie*. But the Biſhop putting off the motion with Courtſhip and kind proteſtations, notwithſtanding laid wait for his life. Which he by his prouidence declining, and in future reſoluing, to take preciſe notice of Popiſh trecheries, firſt couragiouſly oppoſed in the Parliament at

Hubertus Golt. & Hutenus.

Norembergh

Noremberg againſt the Legats of *Innocent*, deputed through *Germany* to collect his Holineſſes diſmes, but diſpatched them away againe to *Rome* as penileſſe, as from thence they departed.

What man liueth ſo void of proficiency, that reading theſe Legends, will hereafter beleeue this traiterous ſociety; ſithence ſuch worthy Emperours, ſuch wiſe Princes, and ſuch great Potentates, could neither by their owne prouidences, nor the prudencie of their counſels, preſcribe themſelues an aſſured meanes, to be fully acquited from their ouer-reaching inuentions?

Maximilian the firſt.

Hee raigned 1494. *About the ninth yeere of* Henry *the ſeuenth.*

AFter the deceaſe of *Frederick*, *Maximilian* being by the generall ſuffrage of the Electors in the life time of his Father choſen for his Conſort in the Empire, was now acknowledged for Emperor. Who although with eaſe hee might haue purchaſed the accuſtomed ſolemnities of *Cæſar*, yet beeing a Prince moſt deepely in-ſeene into worldly practiſes; without queſtion, vpon recordation of ſuch inconueniences, which hee obſerued formerlie to haue fallen vppon the preceding Emperours, (allured vnto Rome, by the glittering reflex of a golden Crowne) hee ſet himſelfe downe, and quoted it in his Ta-

bles ; *That the presence of the Popes were euer to bee auoided, an infallible presage of ensuing aduersity to the Roman Emperors.* Notwithstanding his wariest sinceritie could not at all times auoide their wickedest couse-nages.

Naucl. gen. 49. Mutius li. 29. Cuspinian in vita Maximil. & Zelemi Othomanni.

For in the very infancie of his installement, that most luxurious and couetous Tyrant *Alexander* the sixt, for mony, to the eternall reproch of the Christian name, sold *Zezimus* heire of Turky, expulsed by his brother *Baiazet*, aliue and dead within the space of one day. In like thirst of treasure, receiued from the French, he ratified the Rape of *Anne* of *Britaine*, before espoused by *Proxie* vnto *Maximilian.* The solemnized and consummated mariage of the daughter of the said Emperor with *Charles* of *France*, he dissolued against the will, intreaty, and reall commandement of *Cæsar* her father.

By Cardinall *Raymond* he pillaged the chiefest Prouinces of *Germany* with nouell and vnheard off deuises of exaction.

Mut. li. 3.

By that irregular and incomprehensible power of the keies, for many yeeres to come he gaue pardons to all rich-soules departed.

After him, as second in name, so second in Papacie, *Iulio* circumuented this Emperor with as fine fetches, as did any of his predecessors the former *Cæsars.*

Hubertus Goltz. Paral. Vrsp.

For after he had ingaged his maiesty in the warre of *Venice*, a warre of all other the most dangerous & troublesom, and that he had forced the best of their Cities to the pinch of necessity : *Iulius* against his faith, most religiously sworne before the states of the Empire at *Augusta*; and against common honesty, not only receiued

ued the Venetians, vpon requeſt of peace, into fauour, but entring with them into League, this moſt wicked *Senacherib* turned his armes againſt his Maieſty. Yelling out a ſpeech rather ſhewing euident teſtimony of an Out-lawes humour, then of *Peters* ſucceſſor.

For by records of memory it is certainly reported, that as he paſſed from the City by the bridge of *Tiber*, he threw the keies into the Riuer, exclaiming in fury: *Sithence Peters keies will no longer ſtead vs, welcome Pauls ſword.* Whereby, if a man would fall to ieſt, he might well argue, that by this mad tricke he depriued himſelfe and his ſucceſſors of this Clauian Tyranny, claimed from *S. Peter*, and now tranſferred to *Saint Tiber.*

Vpon which tranſlation of *Iulius* his keies, one hath plaied no leſſe truly, then wittely in theſe verſes.

He that for many Ages *long hath ſate*
In Peters *chaire, new doctrine doth inuent,*
For ſinfull Soules he prayes not: but at that,
Which peacefull Peter him to follow ment,
He ieſts: *Loues armes and bloody ſtreames of warre,*
Paul *is his Saint*, Peter *inferiour farre.*
Paul *hath a ſword, but ſmites not: He not* ſo,
For many ſoules *haue died with his* blow.
A cruell Out-law *ſprung from poyſo'nd woomb,*
And neither followes Chriſt, nor Peters *doome.*

But our great and eternall God, the iuſt reuenger of iniquity, ſuffered not this his neuer-before-heard-of periury to die vnreuenged. *Hubert. Goltz. Mutius lib. 3. Paralip. Vrſp.*

For at what time *Lewes* king of *France*, according to the Conuentions of the League with *Cæſar*, perſecuted his Holineſſe, ſo far ouergone in pride through the aſſiſtance of the Venetians, as hee doubted not to

ſcorne all conditions of peace; yet after the battell of *Rauenna*, ſuch was the diſaſtrous fortune of him and his, that the peace, which but euen now, hee ſcorned, now hee humbly ſeeketh, to his coſt experimenting that for all his ieſting, *Peters* keyes at a pinch did him more ſeruice, then many thouſands of *Pauls* ſwords.

After this ouerthrow, and ſome other croſſes, hee died, and left *Leo* the tenth, his ſucceſſour, as well in ſeat as in trecherous diſpoſition. For in the beginning of his pontificie, eſtranging himſelfe from the *French* King, he adhered to *Cæſar* & *Sforza* the *Millanois*, againſt the French, then in March vpon an inuaſion againſt *Millan*.

Vpon the ſlaughter of the *Heluetians* at *Marignan*, *Frederick* and *Sforza* being reduced into order, he violated his league with *Maximilian*, and returned againe to the friendſhip of *Francis*. Vnto whom, after he had obtained a Graunt, that the pragmaticall Sanction ſhould be aboliſhed in *France*, and a new inſerted, hee conferred the titles of the *Constantinopolitan* Empire.

Arnoldus Feronius in vita Franciſci Valeſij.

In this donation, whether ſhould a Chriſtian more admire his prepoſterous liberality, in giuing away an other mans right, or abhorre his trecherie in doing his vtmoſt, to croſſe *Maximilian*, ſo well-deſeruing an Emperor?

But *Cæſar* finding himſelfe deceiued (whether in this confrontment, or in ſome other, I am not able to ſay) is reported to haue ſaid in Dutch: *That hee could well auow, that none of the Popes had kept faith with him: And that* Leo *ſhould be the laſt of that ranke, vnto whom hee would giue credit.* And that hee ſaid ſo, and did ſo,

Catal. teſtium veritatis.

the ſequel proued. For within a few yeares after falling into a laske, he yeelded vp his ghoſt, in the yeare of Saluation 1519. By whom, by the pleaſure of almighty God, it might haue come to paſſe, that hee, who had beene ſo often illuded by Popiſh practiſes, might haue taken ſome courſe in ſo great an alteration and bleſſed reformation of religion, to haue begun primitiue reſtauration to their finall deſtruction. But being preuented by immature death, what was in his minde, he bequeathed to be executed, by the potencie of his liuing ſucceſſor *Charles*, his brothers ſonne.

Charles the fift.

He raigned Anno 1519. *about the eleuenth yeare of* Henry *the eighth.*

BVt what *Penne*, as it ought, in ſuting ornament, is able to delineat to life, the treacheries which from time to time theſe *Patrons of confuſion* bounded out againſt this *Charles*, this potent and thrice honorable Emperour? In ſo wonderfull an alteration of religion, ſuch as ſince the corruption of the Primitiue, neuer befell the Chriſtian world, who can but wonder at the daring preſumption of the Popes, in prouoking ſo happy and ſo worthy a Potentate? who, taking into notice his ſingular affection in defending and vpholding the Papacie, can chuſe but accurſe the ingratitude of ſuch deſperat perſons?

Iouius li.4. de vita Leonis decimi.

The Pope is now French.

For vpon the deceaſe of *Maximilian*, the Electors being aſſembled at *Frankfort*, *Charles* and *Francis* king of *France*, became competitors for the diademe. *Leo* the tenth, being in bonds of ſtrict friendſhip with *Francis*, and according to the innated humours of the Church, hauing receiued his fee, fauoured and pleaded his beſt plea in barre of *Charles*, to the preferment of his bountifull client *Francis*.

His cautions conſiſted of three principles; the firſt imported a conſideratiue feare of his *Greatnes*, being by inheritance a Prince indowed with many ſpacious and wealthy Kingdomes. The ſecond, was taken from his peculiar and figure-caſting *imagination*; In that, forſooth, this *Charles* by no obſcure and lineamentall predictions of *face* and *diſpoſition*, ſhould reſemble the *man*, fore-told in certaine verſes of an auncient Prophet; *Who ariſing in the North*, ſhould be the motiue of greeuous alterations to fall vpon all *Italy*, but eſpecially vpon the *Romiſh ſea*: The *third* from *pretence of equity*, by letters ſignified vnto the Lords of the Election; *That it ſtoode not with Law for* Charles *to aſpire vnto the Empire*; *for that the Kings of Naples were the Churches Liege-men, and time out of minde by oath had capitulated with the Biſhops, neuer to affect the Romane Empire, but to reſt contented with their inheritances.*

A truer Propheſie, then the Pope was aware of.

Appendix ad Plati. Sleid. vbi ſupra.

Now Imperial.

But by the integrity of *Frederick* Duke of *Saxonie*, in manifeſtation of his loyalty towards *Maximilian* his deceaſed Maſter, vnto whom all his life time hee ſtood moſt deuoted; *Charles* preuailed. *Leo* now turning *Vulpes*, followes the ſtreame; for the preſent, cleanly falleth off from the *French*: And finding Grace to attend *Charles*; there courts he; and thether hee diſpatcheth

cheth his Commendatorie miſeries.

Charles requireth his *Amen* to the Election; as alſo his *diſpenſation*, to retaine with the Empire the Kingdome of *Naples*, the Law of Inueſtiture in no point gaine-ſaying it. But giue a Pope leaue, I pray you, to fly to his wits, he muſt, and doth plot out new deuiſes, to impeach the Greatnes of *Charles*. Hee ſendeth his Breues and meſſengers throughout *Germanie*, to forbid the Diet at *Wormes*: of purpoſe to put off his Coronation at *Aquiſgran*. But when his pontifical improbity perceiued his poſitiue diuerſions to be illuded; and the reſolution of the Electors to be ſuch, as could not be daunted in their proceedings by force, feare, flattery, nor threats, hee then fell againe, to the renuing of his league, with the late-forſaken French: Amongſt other Articles inſerting this for one; That, *both the Sicils ſhould be taken from Charles*; That *the gouernment of Italie ſhould be altered, and the protection of the Cities ſhared, betweene the French and his Holines.*

Reſp. Cæſaris ad breue Apoſtolicum.

Againe French.

Now the queſtion is, for how long time this Combination ſtood immutable: ſo long doubt you not, as it ſtood with the welfare of *Leo*, and the aduantage of his ſea. And this is an eſpecial note, to be alwaies obſerued through the whole diſcourſe of theſe liues.

For, as ſoone as the *French King*, vpon confidence of this Popiſh League, had broken with *Cæſar*, & ſent *Robert de la March*, *Charles* his rebel, to infeſt *Netherland*; yea, and his men of warre into *Italy*, to aſſay the ſurpriſe of *Rhegium*, a towne late belonging to the Church; *Leo* fearing the potencie of the *French*, and calling their fidelities into ſuſpect: to make ſure work for the maintenance of his owne ſtake, and to reduce

a reſtitution to the Church of thoſe townes which the French had vſurped; Now againe the third time hee followeth the Fortunes of *Cæſar:* Deſiring of his Maieſty (after his moſt courteous reception) that *Parma* & *Placentia* might be reſtored to the Church; *Francis Sforza* to the Dutchy of *Millan*; the French expulſed *Italy*, and the Papacy being ſetled in a peaceable eſtate, might thenceforth be ſecured from all feare of the French.

And laſtly Imperiall.

But *Paul* dying; By the ſucceſſion of *Adrian* the ſixt, a Germane borne, the Papall Anger for a while lay ſilenced. For during the ſhort time of his Papacy, As a good ſchoolemaſter, hee perſiſted conſtant in good will towards *Cæſar*; And againſt the French, he aſſiſted him with treaſure, and conioyned him in league with the Florentines, the Siennois, the Luquois, the Roytelets of *Italy*, the Apoſtolique ſea, with *Henry* of *England*, and *Lewes* of *Hungary*.

Gerardus Moringus in vita Hadriani vi. Iouius in vita eiuſdem.

But *Adrian* in the ſecond yeere of his Papacy being departed, not without ſuſpition of poyſon, the fatall practiſes of the Biſhops by ſo much the more eagerneſſe outflamed, by how much they had gathered materialls to worke vpon, during the time of the former reſpiration.

For *Iulius* of *Medices*, otherwiſe *Clement* the ſeuenth, after much wrangling, being elected Pope, before his inſtallation was, no man more, eſteemed of *Ceſar*. From the Church of *Toledo*, by his bounty he receiued an annuity of ten thouſand duckats. He reconciled him ſo throughly into the fauour of *Adrian*, from whence he was fallen, that in all affaires of importance, *Adrian* made him only of his counſell. But no ſooner Pope, no

Peronius in vita regis Franciſci.

Reſp. Cæſaris ad breue Apoſtolicum.

no ſooner traitor. Againſt his Lord hee complotteth league vpon league, diſcharging his bills of account with acquittances of this nature.

For *Francis* the French king being in *Italy*, and after the taking of *Millan* diſperſing his forces throughout *Lombardy*, *Clement* worketh the diſ-union of the *Hadrian* confederacy, and forbiddeth the Florentins, the Syennois and the Luccois to pay the money, which by the conuention they ought to haue ſent vnto *Cæſar*. *Feronius.*

By *Albert Pius* Prince of *Carpi*, he concluded a Clandeſtine league with king *Francis*, meane time cunningly treating with the Imperialiſts by way of ſequeſtration and Indifferency to impledge the territory of *Millan* into his diſcretion. *As Leo: So Iulius.* *As Leo and Iulius, ſo the reſidue: viz. wethercocks, for aduantage.*

But the deuiſe being vtterly diſliked, and fortune againſt all imagination ſo croſſing his deſignements, that in a memorable defeature, *Francis* was taken priſoner at *Paruie*, and carried captiue into *Spaine*; then to his perpetuall reproch of leuity and inconſtancy (to flater with *Cæſar*) he parted with an infinit maſſe of mony for his ſouldiers arrerages: yet during theſe paſſages in iealouzy, that *Charles* would turne his thoughts to the conqueſt of *Millan*, which of all his Italian pretendācies was only left vnconquered, he goeth to counſel with *Loyeſſe* the Queen mother, *Henry* king of *England*, the Venetians and ſome other Potentates, how to expulſe the Imperialiſts out of *Italie*, and redeeme *Francis*. To ſet forward the execution whereof, he dealeth with *Ferdinand Dauila*, a man of eminent place & ſouldiery in *Cæſars* Campe: aſſaieth to draw him to the party, and for a bait offereth him the title of the kingdom of *Naples*. *Dauila* being of a ſubtill & cloſe diſpoſition, *Sleyd li. 4.* *Feronius in vita Francisci.* *Iouius li. 7. in vita F. Daui.*

accepteth, learneth the secrets of the enemies proiects, and acquainteth his master therewith. *Cæsar* laugheth at the mans periury; who being the principall architect of all iniurious & preiudiciall proceedings against him, had notwithstanding himselfe made his enemy priuy to counsels, giuen him very serious cautions in future, how to proceede in his affaires, and how to prouide for his owne security, with an intimation to become carefull to bind the loyalties of his men of warre with greater deuotion to his seruice.

Wherby finding himselfe ouer-reacht by *Dauila*, he giueth not ouer, but trieth another way to the wood: And thus it was: *Francis* being set at liberty by *Cæsar*, and vnwilling to make good these conuentions, wherunto by the treaty of *Madril* he stood obliged; he takes hold of the occasion, absolueth him of his oath; confederateth anew with the French and some others, and proclaimeth the confederacy by the name of the *Most holy League*. Inserting amongst the Articles, that *Cæsar* also might be cõprehended therin, So that, he would first re-deliuer vpon a competent ransome the children of *France*, as yet in hostage for their father: restore *Millan* to *Sforza*, and enter *Italie* for his Coronation with no greater troops, then should seeme requisite to the discretions of the Pope and the Venetians.

What indifferent Reader, weighing the originall of this league, the time wherein it was concluded: and the occasions wherupon it was broched, can make any other construction to his vprighteſt censure, but that his Holinesse had small intention by these iniurious breaches of concluded articles, to further the publique peace, but rather to administer matter of implacable

heart-burnings and assured wars between the Princes. For by one Apostaticall Breue, first, the conditions of the peace are prescribed to so high and mighty an Emperor, by his subiect and Vassall *Sforza* of *Milan*: secondly, the oath of the French King duely and solemnly taken, is pardoned and frustrated: thirdly *Cæsar* is commanded to re-deliuer the children of *France*, as if it were not enough by the releasement of the fathers oath, to be once deluded. Fourthly, He is commanded, not to winke at, but to perpetuate the tyranny of the Italian Kinglings. Fiftly, he is commanded to forbeare to come vnto *Italy*, vnlesse he proportioned his troops to the shape of the *Papal and Venetian limitations*. Sixtly, He is commanded to giue pardon to Traitors: and for conclusion, in case of not-performance, warre is denounced by sea and by land.

Amidst which dishonorable limitations, what could *Cæsar* doe, but in true acknowledgement of the vprightnes of his cause, reiect these base conditions with as great courage on the one side, as they were insolently propounded by the other, reposing more hope in his innocency, then in the multitude of Horse or shipping?

And surely, God almighty, the vnpartiall Iudge of humane actions, so moderated the execution of his diuine iustice, that whatsoeuer complots this architect of euill counsell, meant to haue throwne downe vpon the head of *Cæsar*, the very same befell his own person, euen when he thought himselfe to stand vpon so sure a ground, as to be an onely Spectator of the ensuing troubles.

For *Cæsar* beeing awakened at the Report of so famous

Sleyd. li. 6. Feronius vbi supra.

mous a Confederacie, dispatched into *Italy* the Duke of *Burbon* & *Fronsperg*, Captaines of admirable reputation for their cariage in the last warres; with warrant to defend *Naples*, now by the tenor of the league giuen in prey to warre and dis-vnion.

These Leaders pretending, as if they meant to passe by *Florence*, now growen proud by the continuance of peace, their mighty Citizen the Pope, and the late league; at last bending their course by the mountaines and rocks, vpon the sixt day of May, they solemnly entred *Rome*: droue *Clement* into the Bastil of *Adrian*; and vpon want of all necessaries (his Bulls, his Breues and execrations, thicke and threefold breathed out against the *Germanes* and *Spaniards*, standing him in no stead) compelled him to yeeld; but with so seruile and base conditions, as vpon the like, neuer did Souldier to this day, giue vp his fort.

The insolency of the *Spaniard*, and the inhumanity of the *Germane*, I am not able in apt words to display. See *Guicciardine*, and the Histories of those times.

For besides their horrible pillagings, their spoiles, their rauishments, and their wasts, no kinde of scorne was left vnpractised against the Pope & his Cardinals: All without difference were alike made captiues, all alike tortured: He that was rãsomed to day by the *Spanish*, to morrow was again in durance to the *Germans*.

Like for like, by Cæsar to the Pope.

Cæsar writeth his letters to the *Pope* and the King of *England*, that all this happened besides his priuity or command; yea, that he would not acknowledge such transgressors for his souldiers, who durst attempt so wicked a seruice. Yet sticketh hee not to attribute the mishap to the secret iudgements of God, who would not

not ſuffer ſo groſſe an indignity concluded againſt the Maieſty of the ſacred Empire, to eſcape without puniſhment. *Bona verba.*

The Pope being reſtored to liberty, maketh ſhew of great friendſhip, but in ſecret worketh him all poſſible vexation.

For either vpon hope to poſſeſſe the Kingdome of *Naples*(a preciſe condition in the articles) or elſe in deſire of reuenge; he ſo wrought with the *French* king to renue the warre, that at his direction *Lautrick* was ſent into *Italy*, for the conqueſt thereof. But ſuch was the euent, that *Lautrick* died; the peſtilence raged through the Camp; and nothing was effected. Wherupon, the *French* king for the loue of his children (as yet captiues in *Spaine*) was glad to accept of the proffered conditions. The Biſhop, alwaies accuſtomed to goe with the ſtreame, vpon the peace perfected at *Cambray*, betweene the Emperour, the French, and the other Princes, enſtalleth *Charles* at *Bononia*, with the Imperial diadem, and aydeth him in the ſiege and conqueſt of *Florence*; the people whereof hee ſaw puniſhed moſt ſeuerely. But his Holines had not forgotten to requite *Charles* with many like courteſies, if God had beſtowed longer life vpon him.

For within three yeeres after, hee had complotted a league with *Francis* the French King at *Marſellis*, to take *Millan* from *Cæſar*, & to inuade *Sauoy*; beſtowing his niece *Katherin* vpon his ſonne *Henry*, if, to the good of the Chriſtian common-wealth, he had not beene by death preuented, and that, not without the ſuſpition of poiſon, as ſome ſuppoſe.

Could a more treacherous man be found liuing

If such the men continually, the what their Religion?

then this *Clement*, who contiuually being taken into fauour and alliance with *Cæsar*, continually betrayed his faith, and of a dissembling friend, euermore proued a professed enemie.

After the decease of *Clement*, succeeded *Alexander Farnesius*, otherwise *Paul* the third, a man almost spent with age, yet of a farre more subtile disposition.

Hæc omnia exposita exstant apud Sleyd. li. 17. vsq; ad lib. 23.

For vpon obseruation, that the controuersies in religion did daily more and more augment, and propagate, with singular affection he studied *Cæsars* fauour; but to no other purpose, then in thirst of the German bloud, to combine his Maiestie and the other Princes, in stricter bonds of perseuerance, to take armes against the *Lutherans*; hypocritically giuing out to all persons, and in all places, and that vpon his faith, that hee would speedily assemble the Generall counsell, so often petitioned, and promised to the Germane Nation.

To winne time.

And surely so he did, first proclaiming it to be held at *Mantua*, then at *Verona*, and lastly after the expiration of many yeares at *Trent*: but not with any intention to salue the greeuances of the Christian Commonweale, or the distemperature of the Church: but that by holding the Germanes in suspence vpon the finall determinations of the Councel; meane time he might win time to effectuate his secret resolutions; *viz.* the suppression of the truth, and the restitution of *Germanie*, now through the light of the Gospell beginning to shake off Babilonian tyrannie, to it pristinat captiuity. So in the yeare of our Lord 1546. he celebrateth the Councell at *Trent*, and maketh all possible faire weather with the Germanes. But with what intent? surely to combine the nobility, & to instigate his Maiestie

ieſtie to begin the warre againſt the *Proteſtant* Princes, and the *Euangelicall Cities*. In the beginning whereof, good fortune prognoſticated a proſperous progreſſe vnto *Cæſar* (by the taking of *Iohn Frederick* Elector of *Saxonie*; the *Lantgraue of Heſſen*; the confiſcating of all *Wittembergs* eſtates, and the finacing of many confederat Cities) yet, in being too officious to giue his Holines content, in keeping his priſoners more ſtrictly then Honour could warrant, and in coyning new articles of religion to the Popes beſt liking; ſuch an alteration followed, vpon the riſing of *Maurice* Prince Elector, and *Albert of Brandenburg*, and other new confederates, that (diſmiſſing the captiuated Princes, and granting liberty of Conſcience through *Germanie*) ſo diſaduantageous were his proofes of papall countenance, that he often wiſhed, that he had preferred the loues of the Princes, before the Popes ſureſt alliance.

For although (to confeſſe truth) the proceedings of *Paul* againſt his Maieſtie, were ſlower and better caried, then thoſe of his predeceſſors; in regard that hee was his Champion, to manage bloudy and difficult ſtratagems againſt the ſeruants of God: yet vpon the death of *Peter Aloyſius* duke of *Parma* & *Placentia* (murdered by treaſon for his tyrannie) when *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, *Cæſars* Generall, and Gouernour of *Millan*, was inueſted in his ſtead: the Pope preſently miſtruſteth *Cæſar* for an author of the murder; and in vaine requeſting the Reſtitution of *Placentia*, he ſtrait ſtarteth from *Cæſar*, and bethinketh himſelfe how to ioyne with the *French*: And had ioyned in deed, if hee had longer liued; the time offering ſo fit an opportunity.

Mamb. Roſeus li. 4. appendicis ad Hiſtoriam Neapolita. Pãdulphi Collenutij hæc latè explicat.

For:

For now *Henry* vpon the defeature of the Princes, and the ſeizing on *Placentia* (aboue expectation) growing into iealouſie of the powerfulneſſe of *Cæſar*, renueth his league with the Switzers, and ſtrengthneth his party with friends on all hands.

But in midſt of theſe reuengefull deuiſes, this miſer dyed, diſtracted more through griefe and anguiſh, then any infirmity of Age: the tenth day of Nouember. 1549.

Sleid. li. 21. l. 26. After long wrangling in the Conclaue, 1550. *Iulius* the third is ſaluted Pope: being before his inſtallment, of the French faction, and after, ſo giuen ouer to belly-cheere and venery, that he died of a Lethargy, and wanted rather leiſure then will to attempt againſt *Cæſar*.

But *Paul* the fourth a moſt diueliſh Hypocrite, and next ſucceeding *Marcellus* the ſecond, (a Pope alſo of a few daies ſtanding) by the packing of the Cardinalls wholly deuoted to the French ſeruice, was conſecrated High Prieſt: This man during his Cardinalſhip, was *Cæſars* moſt malitious enemy: Inſomuch that by his prouocation, *Paul* the third was perſwaded to inuade *Naples*, as an apourtenāt of the Church. But now enioying fuller meanes to worke fuller deſpights, hee maketh open profeſſion of his late concealed malice, and proſecuteth his followers with indignities of deepeſt fury. For no ſooner was he ſeated in the Chaire of the ſcarlet Beaſt, but he caſteth into durance *Alexander Farneſius* Cardinall of *Sanflorian*, *Camillus Collonna*, and *Iulianus Cæſar* with his brother the Archbiſhop, vpon ſuſpition of a conſpiracy complotted againſt him in fauour of the Imperialiſts. As many the Seruants and miniſters of *Cæſar*, here and there negotia-

M. Roſeus li. 4. append. ad Hiſt. Neopolit. Hiero. Roſellus de bello Romano.

ting

ring his affaires through *Italy*, as he could lay hands on, he ſeazeth; and amongſt theſe, *Taſcis* maſter of the foreſts to his maieſty, and *don Garzia Laſſus* a Duke of no obſcure reputation amongſt the Spaniſh.

Marke Anthonie Colonna beeing abſent, he citeth to appeare before him within three daies ſpace; and in default of appearaunce, hee maketh prize of his goods.

To *Iohn* Count of *Montorian*, he giueth the goods of *Aſcanius Colonna*, together with the titular Earledome of *Pallianum*.

In deſpight of *Ceſar* he recalleth the Out-lawed gentlemen of *Naples*, and endoweth them with offices, and publique preheminences.

At the inſtance of *Peter Stroza*, he fortifieth *Pallianum*, and prepareth it for the receit of the French to the infeſting of *Naples*.

Finally, by ſending his kinſman Cardinall *Caraffa* into *France*, moſt impiouſly he diſturbeth the peace concluded in *Belgia*, betweene his moſt excellent Maieſty and the French Monarch.

And to bee eſpecially carefull, that no one ſhot of Popiſh malice ſhould miſſe his Maieſty, he abſolutely denieth his ſonne *Philip* (vnto whom the father had reſigned the adminiſtration of all his kingdoms) the inueſtiture of the kingdomes of *Naples* and *Sicil*, being held of the Church. Wherupon followed ſuch furious and lamentable wars, managed between theſe mighty potentates of Chriſtendome, that *Italy* and *France* being chiefly ingaged therein, recked againe in the bloody tragedies of their deereſt Citizens.

For not *Rome* only was almoſt brought vnto thoſe extremities *Guil. Zenocarus de vita caroli. 5.*

extremities by the preſence of the Duke of *Alua*, which once it ſuffered in the daies of *Clement*, and for the preſent auoided by accepting of theſe conditions, which the now-ſomwhat-lenified Lord Generall propounded: but the French alſo in fauour of the Papacy, being ſent into *Italy* vnder the conduct of the Guiſe, to infeſt the peacefull eſtate of the Latian prouinces, vnderwent the miſerable deſtiny of vnfortunate warfare, in their indeauours to thruſt in new forces into the chiefe City of Vermandois, againſt the ſquadrons of King *Philip*, marching out of *Belgia* to the reliefe of the ſaid place. In which conflict their whole army was routed by the Germane Horſe, the Conſtable, the Rhene-graue, and many noble men taken priſoners, and the City forced.

At Saint Quintins.

And not long after being maſters of *Calaies*, they ſuffered a no leſſe diſaſterous defeature in their returne by *Graueling* at *Count Egmonds* hands: *Termes* and *Villebon* their two moſt famous leaders beeing taken priſoners, their armie routed, and their people ſlaine.

Now, what vpright conſcience can ſauour a Religion ſo inſatiate of blood? or what Chriſtian can thinke that Man, who to perfect his owne reſpects, careth not what miſchiefe he worketh, to be the Vicar of Chriſt?

Surely, Let them impudently affirme what they liſt, their workes ſo perſpicuouſly layde open to meaneſt capacities, may with ſufficiencie aſſure vs, that through the whole courſe of their ſucceſſions, they haue euer rather merited the Sir-names of *Saule*, then the leaſt title of *Paul*. And ſo to the worlds end will they doe,

doe, rather then by the redeeming of one Christian soule from spoile and bloodshed, they will suffer one Acre of *Saint Peters* imaginary patrimony, to be wrested from them, if possibility or trecherous pollicy can any way withstand it.

Ferdinand Cæsar.

Hee raigned 1558. *About the fift yeere of Queene* Mary.

AS soone as *Charles* had betaken himselfe to a solitarie life in *Saint Iustus* in *Spaine*, his brother *Ferdinand* long before elected King of the Romanes, now by the generall suffrage of the Electors assembled at *Frankford*, is preferred vnto the Empire. After the ceremonies whereof accomplished, to make manifest his obseruancie towards the Romish Sea, he dispatcheth to his Holinesse *Guzman*, his chiefe chamberlaine; to signifie, that his Maiesties pleasure was, vpon oportunity of first-offered-occasion, to request and receiue the imperiall Diadem at his Holinesse Hands. But such was his father-hoods arrogant and froward answer: that it may well argue the Relator, not onely not to be the successor of *Peter*, who with the residue of the Apostles, reuerenced the authoritie of the higher powers, as the ordinance of

God, with due honour and obedience: no, nor a man willing to doe one good turne for another, according to the mutuall lawes of courteſie and humanity: but in truth, that very Antichriſt, whom the warrant of *Holy writ* doth point out, to be the perſon, who ſhould arrogate to himſelfe, to preſcribe aboue, and againſt any thing, that God himſelfe hath commanded to be holy and inuiolable.

For this irregular *Beaſt*, would vppon no reaſon acknowledge *Ferdinand* for Emperour; cauilling that his predeceſſour *Charles*, had no ability or capacity to ſurrender the Empire to no liuing creature, but to the Romiſh Sea; Neither that it was lawfull for *Ferdinand*, to take vppon him the adminiſtration of the State, without the approbation thereof.

His Maieſties Embaſſadour hee would at no hand ſuffer to approach his preſence; but hauing learnt out the tenour of his Embaſſie, hee propounded vnto the Cardinals and Lawyers certaine queſtions, neither ariſing from the rudiments of Gods word, nor enforced from the grounds of Nationall Lawes; but harried from the deepeſt Abyſſe, and there diſcuſſed by *Lucifer* the Prince of malice, pride and falſities. Which, as afterward they were libelled out, and diſperſed by the Romaniſts themſelues, you ſhall here receiue.

1 If *Guzman*, who auerreth that *Hee* is ſent from his Lord *Ferdinand*, vnto the moſt *Holy Lord* the Pope, ought by Law to ſpeake what *Charles* the fifth hath done, about the reſignation of the Empire to his brother

brother *Ferdinand.*

2 Which being ſufficiently vnderſtoode; whether they, wholy, or in part haue done rightfully and lawfully, ſithence the *Approbation* of the moſt Holy Lord the Pope, and the Apoſtolique ſea, was not interpoſed therein.

3 Whether, theſe difficulties being cleared; nothing for the preſent may bee obiected againſt the perſon of the moſt excellent Lord *Ferdinand.* Whereby, hee may be adiudged incapable of the Imperiall dignity: *As the euill education of his ſonne the king of* Bohem, *inclinable to manifeſt hereſie.* It beeing promiſed, that within the Kingdomes ſubiect to his authority, hereſies are tollerated without puniſhment; Catholiques are oppreſſed, Monaſteries diſſolued, Churches auoided, and the Profeſſours of the Auguſtane reformation, ſuffered to conuerſe and inhabite promiſcuouſlie with Romiſh Catholiques.

As alſo, that *Ferdinand* himſelfe did graunt a conference at *Wormes*, as touching controuerſies in Religion, without the conſent and good leaue of the Holy Apoſtolique Sea. That, Hee bound himſelfe by oath in the Dyet of *Frankford*, to obſerue all the Articles confirmed in the fore paſſed Seſſions; wherein manie damnable and Hereticall opinions were maintained and allowed. That, Hee vſurped the Name of *Emperour* by his owne Authority. That he ſuſpended the Decree, publiſhed againſt Communicants vnder both kindes; eſpecially at ſuch a time, wherein ſeuereſt execution was moſt requiſite: That

he had falsified his oath, taken vpon his first election of King of *Romanes* (wherein he had bound himselfe, to be a defender of the Church, and the Catholique faith) schismes, heresies, and the Protestant Religion. That he had faulted in many more points of like kind, against his oath, and the Holy Canons.

4 What in like manner were to be determined concerning the persons of many the Princes Electors, who being notoriously knowen to haue forsaken the *Romish religion*, haue agreed to this *Resignation*: And how all these mischiefes may be preuented and remedied with the least disturbance and breach of Tranquility to the Christian Common-wealth. These were the points to be questioned by the Cardinals.

No true Popish motion: but in these dayes the Turk is growen too neere a neighbour.

Now albeit the Method of the Narration doe binde me, to acquaint you with the Resolutions of these Creatures the Cardinals (for surely I know it is a part of my task to diue into the cunning intendments of these proposed questions:) Notwithstanding, the incompatible pride of the Romanists; their tyrannizing ouer all Lawes, and the indignity of such base, wicked, and malicious propositions, doe wholy diuert mee from my intended Method, forcibly compelling me against the Rules of Historie, to walke a long digression from my intended Narration. For which, I beseech thee (Reader) pardon and patience.

For who vpon mature deliberation of such scruples, knowing the *Author* by whom they were propounded, can refraine from accursing this so fanatical an ambition of Soueraigntie in a Bishop, accompanied with such horrible impiety & contempt of his euerliuing Masters commandement? What conscience

can

can but bluſh at his impudencie, who hauing by Gods permiſſion for our manifold ſinnes tyranized ouer the Church of Chriſt for ſo many yeares, would yet at this day, in deſpight of light and truth, reduce Kings and Princes into the auncient eſtate of their Babilonical ſeruitude? Not once looking back vpon ſuch like narrations as theſe, (taken out from their owne Records) to conſider, how their predeceſſors to work their wils vpon mighty Potentates (for *hic Aquila non captat muſcas, & quicquid delirant Reges, plectuntur Achiui.*) haue made no more conſcience by ſecret and cunning practiſes, to imbrue the whole Chriſtian world in bloud and deſolation; then a Turkiſh Generall by falſifying his faith, hath done againſt conquered Chriſtians. Yea, I dare auow, (for *experientia optima magiſtra*) that by hooke or crooke, at this day they would as eagerly follow their Canonical preſidents, to reſtore their *Entrados (hinc illæ Lachrimæ)* as euer did any of their Luciferian predeceſſors. Were it not, but that they apprehend, how the Turkiſh forces, firſt by land affront the Empire from the Carpathie Mountaines to the Ardiatique: Secondly by ſea, how at diuers times, but eſpecially in the yeare of our Lord 1534. *Barbaruſſa* ſo ſcoured alongſt the coaſt of *Italy*, that if he had deſcended a little lower to *Oſtia*, *actum eſſet de Roma.* His Holineſſe muſt haue reſorted to auncient deuiſes, *viz.* peraduenture haue ſought a new *Auignion* in *Thule* or *China*, whether his Ieſuites are already imployed to prepare his way. But this is not all the feare, wherewith theſe mercileſſe fellowes haue terrified *his holy wiſedome.*

Muſtipha at Famaguſta.

Tunc tua res agitur, &c.

For the world doth know, that for a whole Winter

Read the Turkish Historie for the bottome of their inforced lenities.

ter they haue set footing in *Italy*, and wasted *Friuli*. Which to preuent, by the best meanes, wherewith God hath truely inabled him, and the residue of the Christian Princes, if they be not prouident, I can but pray, that his diuine Maiesty would be pleased, to resume the welfare of his people into his owne protection. *And so to the Response of the Cardinals.*

Who confessing the weightinesse of the questions to be such, as partly in regard of the nouelty, partly in regard of the *qualitie of the persons*, and lastlie in regard of the *trouble of the times*, and the power of the infidell enemy, they ought to be examined in a full counsell of the choicest and discreetest wisedomes; yet either in wayward affectation to preserue the Papall Authority, or in feare of his bestiall furiousnesse, malitiously powred out on all sorts without difference; they returned an answer rather testifying some such imagination, then any way sauouring of truth or integrity.

And thus it was. *That, it ought to bee prooued by publique Euidence, whether it appeared, that the Empire became voide by* Charles *his Resignation, or by some other meanes. That, it ought to be sifted how* Ferdinand *could pretend to succeed: meane time that his Embassador sent to Proxy his obedience, or to negotiate any other publique Act, ought not to be admitted. That all things treated of and ratified at* Frankford *concerning* Ferdinands *election, were voide, frustrate and of no effect, for that the Scepter of the Apostolike Sea (vnto whome at first the keies of all heauenly and earthly power were giuen) was not first mediated. That those worthy personages who were assisting and tainted of hereticall impiety, had forfeited all the rites and prerogatiues, of old granted them, concerning the election*

election of Emperors . As touching the points obiected against his Maiesty in the third article: That it was of greateſt conſequence; and had need of penance: which being performed, his Holineſſe was to proceed according to fatherlie clemency. Whereupon a Procurator was to be ſent from his Popiſhneſſe, to renounce all the ſanctions and decrees ratified at Frankford . *After publication whereof, and the Empire now voide, a new* mandat *might bee made to petition* Confirmation, *for that it is apparant, that by virtue of the Election, adioyned to* Clement *his Confirmation,* Ferdinand *ought to ſucceede in the Empire.*

As concerning the impediment procured by his owne default, and ſomewhat hindering him; It *ought to bee put to Examination: That after* abſolution *obtained,* obedience *performed, and the auncient* oath of fidelity *adminiſtred, he may fully enioy the confirmation of the Apoſtolique Court. Whoſe only and peculiar propertie it is, to wide open its Armes, louingly and halfe way (as it were) to imbrace euerie liuing ſoule comming to be receiued vpon repentance, and flying thereunto with a liuelie faith.*

O you Romaniſts! here let mee aske you, which of you dare preſume to ſay, that hee is more holie, or more religious, then *Ferdinand?* What is his ſinne ſo greatly to bee repented of? What manner of repentance is that, which you ſo much deſire? or how ſhall he hope to ſpeede, if hee ſtand to your wauering and diſpenſatorie diſcretions? Here is no fault committed againſt God: his word doth warrant his proceedings. The fundamental lawes of the Empire do auouch *that an Emperor being choſen by al the Electors, or*

Vide de hoc conſtit. Lodouici 4. apud Alberic. de Roſate L. Benè a Zenone C. de quadrien. præſcript.

the more part of them, vpon the very election, wit hout approbation of Pope, or any other forraine Potentate, is to be recciued for true and indubitate Emperor. Cardinall *Cuſanus* ſaith:

Lib. de concord. Cathol. cap. 4.

Electores, qui communi conſenſu omnium Almanorum & aliorum qui imperio ſubiecti erant, tempore ſecundi Henrici conſtituti ſunt, radicalem vim habent ab ipſo communi omnium conſenſu, qui ſibi naturali iure Imperatorem conſtituere poterant: non ab ipſo Romano Pontifice, in cuius poteſtate non eſt, dare cuicunque prouinciæ per mundum Regem vel Imperatorem; ipſa non conſentiente.

The Electors who were inſtituted by the common aſſent of all the Almanes, and others the ſubiects of the Empire, in the time of *Henrie* the ſecond: by the ſaid generall conſent haue a ſucceſſiue power, by their municipiall lawes to chuſe vnto themſelues an Emperour. Without depending vpon the Pope, in whoſe power it is not, to limit vnto any prouince vnder the cope of heauen, a King or gouernour, without its owne agreement.

But admit there were nó ſuch law, is not the inauguration of all Princes meerly temporall? are not the ſetting on of a Crown, the girding of a ſword, and the deliuery of a Scepter, orders meerely ceremoniall? where are then your intereſſed claimes? I will leaue you to your wits, and proceede to your ſtarting-holes of *ſpiritualia*; Which I am ſure conſiſt in ſuffering the people to receiue the bleſſed Communion vnder both kinds. Here is a ſinne vnpardonable. Stay, I beſeech you. Did not *Paul* the third, and he a Pope, ſend

out

out his Bulls, wherby he gaue all the Biſhops throughout *Germanie* full authority to communicate vnto the people vnder both kinds? How ſay ye? ſhall his Maieſty be exempted, and they priuiledged? will you tolerate an order of your owne inacting in euery pariſh, and not ſuffer the magiſtrate to ſee the ſame by peace and quietneſſe preſerued and executed through a whole kingdom? you know vpon what points of neceſſity, that Bull was granted, and now rather then you will faile to make odious his ſacred Maieſty to the fautours of your paſſions, you will quarrell him about an act of your owne allowance. Woe vnto you, you Hypocrits, who in words ſeeme Saints, but in your hearts retaine not a graine of piety. Woe vnto you, who offer your open breſts to penitentiaries, but hauing them in your clutches, you teare them in their conſciences with more then heatheniſh foppery. You inioine penance to others, and performe no ſuch matter your ſelues. Amongſt your ſelues, yee reueale all ſecrets, and are Iouiall thereat; but treaſons and maſſacres you conceale, and then your impudent wits muſt beare you out, (for your faces will not) that it was told vnder the vaile of confeſſion. Thus by impoſtures you liue, you raigne, and deceiue the world, neither caring to enter heauens gates themſelues nor ſuffering others to enter that would.

Strange concluſions in Poperie.

Well, during the *Interim* of theſe ponderous machinations againſt his Maieſty by the college of Cardinalls, *Guzman* comming to the vnderſtanding thereof, day by day haſteneth his Audience before his Holineſſe. At laſt after three moneths attendance, and earneſt begging (but not before hee had receiued a more

ſtrict commandement from his Maſter) either vpon audience to execute his commiſſion, or without delay to returne from *Rome*, hee is admitted to ſpeake in the preſence of ſeuen Cardinals, from whom hee rereceiueth this aunſwere. *Foraſmuch as his demaund required the moſt mature deliberation of the Cardinals, and ſuch like perſons learned in the Lawes, that, according to his Maſters commaund hee might depart at pleaſure: meane time his Holineſſe would recall the whole matter vnto full examination.*

Note the Euaſion.

Good GOD, what other deliberation could be meant heereby, more then a meere cunning, and dilatorie illuſion? For the matter had beene againe and againe diſputed on, and the confirmation ſo long delayed, in expectation of ſome diſaſter, which *Time* might produce againſt *Cæſar*, that before any thing was determined, this *politique Impoſtor* was taken out of this world. After whom departed vnto the place of eternall bliſſe this worthy Emperour; but ſo, that the confirmation which *Clement* made litigious, *Pius* the fourth offered willingly, and *Ferdinand* reiected as conſtantly, after the examples of *Radulph* of *Habſburge* his progenitor, and *Maximilian* his Grandfather, contenting himſelfe with the orderly election of the German Princes.

I haue heard report of as weighty a toleration as this, euen in matters of religion, if as vertuous a Princeſſe, as any of theſe afore-named, would haue condiſcended to haue accepted the approbation at his Holineſſes hand. And as the world now ſtandeth, who doubteth but the Pope would doe much to be reconciled to ſome Chriſtian *Conſtantines*,

And

And therefore to conclude, I hold it not fit to conceale theſe worthy remembrances of his godlineſſe and ſincerity; That in his raigne, in the yeare 1552. the ſecond day of Auguſt, an Edict was obtained, whereby peace was graunted to the profeſſors of the *Auguſtan* confeſſion.

That, in the yeare 1555. that *noble Decree* followed, wherein it was ordained, that *no force, nor offence, directly or indirectly, in caſe of Religion ſhould be thence-forth vſed againſt Prince, Earle, or any imperiall Citie.*

In the yeare 1559. at *Auguſta*, in a full aſſembly of the States, the ſaid Decree was reuiued and confirmed.

After which Conſtitutions confirmed by the tranſaction of *Paſſauia*, and confirmed by the Eſtates (as I ſaide at *Ausburg*) this good Emperour perſwading himſelfe, that mens mindes were wrought to Religion, more by preaching and teaching, then by force and bloud-ſhed; was willing, euen within his owne hereditarie poſſeſſions, *That no ſubiect of his ſhould bee troubled for his conſcience*. Wiſhing, that ſome abuſes (vſed by the Romaniſts) might by lawfull and moderate proceedings be reformed, and yet the Hierarchy and order of the Eccleſiaſtical policy, be decently maintained.

Whereupon, when the *Auſtrians* deſired the publique vſe of the Lords ſupper in both kindes; as alſo other articles of religion, to be freely permitted them, which they had drawen forth in the confeſſion of *Ausburg*; *Ferdinand*, not onely tooke the articles, and the

reasons of the abuses (deseruing reformation) into his owne consideration: but also, when he heard the testimonie of the Greeke Church, concurring with the petition, hee sent *Vrban* Bishop of *Gurcia* for this cause principally to *Venice*, that there he should procure instructions, how the Greekes accustomed to doe in distribution of this part of the Lords supper: as also what was their *Opinion* concerning this maine point of doctrine. And in the Synod of *Trent* by his *Orators*, he did most instantly insist and vrge; That by leaue of the Pope, the people of *Austria* might vse both the parts of the Sacrament.

Somewhat before his death, he receaued the *Breue*, authorizing the Communion to be administred vnto the Laity vnder both kindes, which *Pius* the fourth sent vnto the Archbishop of *Salisburge*; but interlaced with diuers limitation of conditiõs. Wherat this good Emperor did exceedingly reioyce, andg aue thanks that it pleased God, that he had obtained that, which his subiects of *Austria*, had so often, and so earnestly desired of his Maiestie.

Inseruiendum est tempori.

For his cariage towards the *Counsell of Trent*, which he referred wholy to his Holinesse, I hold it not fit to speake. For he adiudged, that hee had receiued an infinite pleasure from the Pope, in that he had graunted him that, (though by much intreaty and many restrictions) which Christ commanded vnto all Christians, plainly and effectually.

Maximilian

Maximilian the ſecond.

Hee began his raigne in the ſixt yeare of Queene Elizabeth.

BEtter fortunes, then his *father* and *vncle Charles*, had not *Maximilian* the ſecond, from whom concerning the ample promiſes of *Clement* the ſeuenth, wee haue heard this ſaying to proceed: *It is ſurely Iacobs voice; but his hands denote him to be Eſau*: vehemently complaining, *That euermore theſe people haue violated their faith, and broken their leagues: That againſt all right and equitie, their words are of no validity, nor their oathes of force.* And therefore hereafter neuer to be captiuated with ſecurity.

He was created Emperour in the yeare of our Lord 1564. A Prince of a ſincere diſpoſition, eſpecially in matters of religion: which when hee perceiued to be ſorely ſhaken and rent, with diuerſity of opinions; hee greeued in minde, but ſhewed himſelfe indifferent to the profeſſors thereof, neuer hindering the courſe with any ſeuere edict.

Which his godly moderation, cauſed the *Romaniſts* to offer him ſome hard meaſure ſurely not to be ſaid, to haue vtterly waſht away the contagion of their ancient treacherie and malice, in *eſſe* diuolued vpon them from the ſucceſſiue diſcent of ſo many their predeceſſors. But this worthy *Prince* was nothing mooued

there at,

thereat, neither ſtarted one iot from his accuſtomed lenitie. *Crato Craftheim* his Councellor and Phyſition, a man beyond all exception, ſhall witneſſe it in his funerall Oration. *The Emperor* Maximilian *neuer entred into iudgement of another mans Conſcience, but alwaies in controuerſie of Religion forbore by force to ſettle mens minds. For he confeſſed in the hearing of many men ten yeeres agoe, vnto* William Prelate *of* Olomuch: *That no ſinne was more greeuous, then the forcing of Conſciences,* Many are alſo aliue who remember what hee ſaid to a Prince flying his kingdome, and in his flight reſorting vnto him for ſuccour: *Surely thoſe that arrogate power ouer mens conſciences, inuade the bulwarkes of Heauen, and oftentimes looſe that Authority, which God here hath giuen them vpon earth.*

Such care and ſtudy as Father *Ferdinand* vſed in obſeruing the Pacification of *Paſſauia*, the ſame the ſonne *Maximilian* emulated and defended, permitting vnto the Auſtrian Nobility the doctrine of the confeſſion of Ausburg by edict, dated the 18. Auguſt. 1568.

For when as many noble men of *Auſtria* vnder the gouernment of *Ferdinand*, had preſented vnto *Charles* the fift, certaine Euangelicall miniſters profeſſing the Confeſſion of *Ausburg*: and amongſt theſe, many turbulent ſpirits diſmiſſed vppon many occaſions from many parts of *Germanie*, had reſorted vnto his gouernment as to a place of ſecurity; And vnder blinde pretences of Euangelicall liberty had inconſiderately innouated and tumultuouſly preached many things concerning Church-gouernement: This *Maximilian* after the example of his father, thought it not meet to prohibit his ſubiects the confeſſion of *Ausburg*; and

yet

yet forbore not to reſtraine that anarchiall temerity of ſuch hot ſpirits, throughout euery ſeuerall village of the Prouince, almoſt teaching and inſtituting a peculiar forme of Doctrine and Ceremonies.

At laſt at the earneſt entreaty and humble petitions of the Auſtrian Nobility, he permitted them the free exerciſe of the Auguſtan confeſſion, both in Churches and families, ſo that they would aſſure him to obſerue that certaine order of doctrine and celebration of the Lords ſupper, throughout all their Churches, which as then was already vſed and imbraced by the reſidue of the Proteſtant Churches, according to the preſcript of order of the ſaid confeſſion. For reformation whereof he emploied *Ioachim Camerarius* and *Dauid Chytreus*: and the promiſe once granted, being afterwards Emperor he obſerued moſt religiouſly. Of whoſe faith and integrity, although to his neuer dying honour much may be ſpoken, yet here will we ceaſe, and fall to diſcourſe vpon the ſucceſſion of his Sonne *Rodolph*. What further matter the good and well minded Reader may expect, I will leaue to his own diſcretion to be exemplified, by the application of theſe old verſes:

Tempora mutantur, Papa & mutatur in illis:
Felix quem faciunt Romana pericula cautum.

Rodolph the ſecond.

RODOLPH now onely remaineth. Here, whether I ſhould admire at the buſie, but now out-worne fury, tyranny and ambition of theſe ſelfe-wild Biſhops: or reioice at the reſtored magnanimity, fortitude, and conſtancy of our Emperour *Rodolph*, I confeſſe my ſelfe grauelled. But to affirme nothing of mine owne braine, here behold a witneſſe acting his own part; A man aboue exception, auouching——

He is the ſame, who was Author of the Commentary vpon the *Coloin Buſineſſe*. Theſe are his words; *What (ſaith hee) ſhould I ſpeake of the inuincible Emperour* Rodolph, *who now raigneth. I haue ſeene his Embaſſadours at* Rome, *the moſt noble and valiant Lord* Flacchus, *Prior of the Order of* Saint Iohn of Ieruſalem in Germany, *and* Ierome Turner *of his Maieſtics Councell: A man of exquiſit learning, of high wiſedom, faithfull and honeſt. I ſoiourned with them in the ſame houſe; For they lodged with Cardinall* Mandrutius (*whome for honours ſake I name*) *my very honourable good Maſter, and a man of excellent vertues. He for acquaintance ſake intertained them kindly, and vſed them royally: they ſtayed with vs almoſt one whole ſummer: of which delay this was the cauſe.*

The Pope, *Gregorie* the thirteenth was wonderfull deſirous to haue the Emperour performe his obedience to his Popeſhip. For, *that it ought ſo to be*, he pleaded

ded *preſcription*. The Ambaſſadors, to doe more then their Commiſſion warranted, reſolutely refuſed. And their Commiſſion ſtretched no further, then to promiſe *Obſequium*, his humble ſeruice to the Pope, but obedience vnto the Church.

Letters hereof were ſent vnto his Maieſty, and meane while *Turner* was eagerly aſſaulted by the Cardinals to change opinion; but he was conſtant. At laſt, vntill the Emperors Maieſty could be wrought, to relinquiſh that forme of words, which the worthy and laudable *Cæſars, Ferdinand* his grandfather and *Maximilian* his father had vſed, the Embaſſador was accepted to do what he was commanded. And ſo in a full aſſembly of the Cardinals, the Pope being mounted vpon an high Seig, *Hee promiſed his Holineſſe his ſeruice*, and the Church, *his obedience*. In action whereof he gaue good proofes of his learning, wiſedome, and admirable boldneſſe.

To many in the City, this ſeemed a ridiculous contention, ſithence the words *obſequium* and *obedientia* doe ſo little differ in ſubſtance: but let them laugh; The Popes rites well vnderſtand the meaning thereof, otherwiſe, let them bee aſſured, that his *wiſedome* would not ſo ſtifly haue inſiſted vppon the bare word of obedience.

As for the Emperour, the world knoweth, that here he made it manifeſt, that hee was not bound to giue obedience vnto a Biſhop, his ſubiect, from whome hee expected ſubiection and fealtie: At leaſtwiſe he layde an excellent foundation, towards the reſtitution of the decayed Honour of the Empire, by others to be perfected as God and time ſhall offer occaſion.

caſion. For what a greater bleſſing can a Chriſtian man wiſh, then to ſee a Biſhop praying and preaching, and abhorring to preſcribe lawes vnto a temporall Emperour? What other thing more neceſſarie for peace and humane ſociety can the *Councel of State* deuiſe, then to bridle ſeditious mindes, from taking aduantage to diſquiet the State, vpon euery ſiniſter ſeducement of an vnconſcionable Ieſuite? Which if they once effect, then ſhall the Emperours giue them their due fauours, that is, acknowledge the *Lateran Biſhops* to be *venerable fathers*. If theſe paſſages, I ſay, were reduced to their priſtinate forme and integrity, then no longer ſhould wee behold the Chriſtian people turmoyled in diſcords, no Princes murdered, no oaths of allegeance impugned, no equiuocation iuſtified, nor Turkiſh inuaſions ſo powerfully maintained.

But of theſe abuſes, and many more mentioned by mine Author, and ſtill maintained, but not with auncient obſtinacie, for want of this implored reformation, let him that hath a ſtomach to bee informed, read the Apology, brought out of *Spaine*, and printed at *Antwarp* in the yeare 1527. There in order ſhall hee finde as much as followeth, the ſumme whereof drawen into heads, ſhall ſuffice for this preſent.

1 The *Breues* of *Clement* the ſeuenth, wherein hee loadeth *Ceſar* with as many calumniations, as his witte could deuiſe, and thoſe moſt falſe and forged.

2 The aunſwere of the Emperour *Charles* the fifth vnto theſe forgeries.

3 The

3 The ſecond *Breues* of the Pope, wherein vppon repentance that hee had falſly accuſed *Cæſar*, hee ſendeth vnto his *Nuncio*, to forbid him the deliuery of the former *Breues*.

4 The anſwer of *Cæſar* to theſe ſecond *Breues*.

5 An Epiſtle of *Charles Cæſar* vnto the Colledge of Cardinalls, deſiring them, that in caſe his Holineſſe did continue either to denie, or differ, a *generall Councell*, that they themſelues would proclaime it.

Now that wee haue fully informed you how this halfe-deplumed Eſtritch hath notwithſtanding oppoſed againſt the two laſt Emperours, *Ferdinand* and *Maximilian*, and not at this day feareth not to bee troubleſome vnto their ſucceſſour *Rodolph:* As alſo, how his patience hath beene nettled by the tranſaction of *Paſſauia*, and the Edicts of peace deuiſed, ratified and proclaimed by theſe three late worthy Emperours: It ſhall not for a perclous vnto your wearied mindes, I hope, proue a loathing ſeruice, if I ſhall in order recite vnto you, at what warde his Holineſſe at this day lieth, conſidering that hee is not able any longer, to ſet father againſt ſonne, and ſonne againſt father in open action; Prince againſt Prince, and people againſt Prince, and Prince againſt people.

Theſe practiſes are reuealed and abſolute, now muſt they erect (and but once erect) an order to purpoſe; *An order that muſt commit all villanies, and his Popeſhip not ſeene therein:* an order that muſt ſtudie Matchiauell, entertaine intelligence, and able in

it ſelfe to negotiat in Princes affaires, without poſting and repoſting, to the view of the world, for their diſpatches to *Rome*: an order of all orders that euer were deuiſed, the moſt cruell and truly beſtial; the bane of mankinde, and the fire-brands of Chriſtendome. Of whom, if any worthy pen would take the paines, to indict a Legend; the world ſhould ſoone perceiue, that they to the vnderpropping of this declining ſea, within theſe few yeares, haue committed as many forgeries, villanies, and ſeducements to warre and murder, as their Maſters before them haue done in many Ages. So furious are their humours, ſo irregular their conſciences to worke, pleaſing ſeruices to their politique Monarch! Bound they are to auert, whatſoeuer they ſhall thinke or know preiudiciall to the Romiſh ſea. Bound they are (as much as in them lieth) to hinder the propagation of the Goſpel. Then, their calling being ſuch, their ſeruice ſuch, and ſuch their vowes, let vs learne amongſt many of their actions, by ſome few, what peace in religion is to be expected, from ſuch perſons, that hereafter we may be able to diſcerne the man by his ſpeech, as the Lion by his clawes.

Witneſſe France, Belgia, and Hungarie.

Notes of priuate paſſion.

HE that playeth the Prologue, is *Conradus Brunus*, attired in his third booke. *cap.* 1. *pag* 305. oppugning, railing and annihilating the Tranſaction of *Paſſauia*, and the peace granted thereupon; a peace ſo religiouſly ratified by ſuch and ſo many hand-writings, and ſo ſolemnly ſworne vnto by ſuch iuſt, honourable and worthy perſonages. At his firſt entrance you ſhall

Onely becauſe it reformed Popery.

ſhall know him by his brazen face, and now you ſhall heare him ſpeake. The Edict (ſaith hee) is friuolous, void, and at no hand to be obſerued: His reaſon, becauſe a Catholique ought not liue peaceably with ſuch Heretiques, for ſo ſhould they neuer be offended nor aboliſhed. Yea, ſo much the rather were the aſſociation ſo ordered to be abhorred and abominable, for that a Catholique meeting one of them, ſhould be adiudged to haue aſſented to the peace: But to offend them (with whom there is no communion) can be no breach of peace; as whom the Lawes of the Empire doe ſubiect vnder a curſe, and expoſe to offence, without puniſhment: Finally, whom all diuine and humane conſtitutions, would haue to be vtterly extirpated.

The next that preſenteth himſelfe is *Paul Windich*, in his booke *de Hæreticis extirpandis pag.* 324. And hee termeth this *religious peace* to be nothing but a breathing, a delay, or a toleration. *pag.* 327. He ſaith, that, in his minde, he can but wonder at the madneſſe of the Sectaries. For fooliſhly auouching, and ſo often babling out the Decrees of the Diets, for the free exerciſe of their religion. If I ſhould ſtand to preſent you with *Melchion*, *Hoſius* and *Poſſerinus*, who wrote whole diſcourſes vnto *Henry* and *Stephan* Kings of *Polonia*, *to take into their ſerious cogitations*, the extirpation of the Euangelicall profeſſors, I ſhould but weary you with words. Two lines ſhall ſuffice. *With the Proteſtant (Polonians) the aſſurance giuen vpon Faith, is at no hand to be obſerued: for that an oath ought not to be the bond of iniquitie.*

Iames Menochius the Lawyer, *Conſil.* 100. *Num.* 225. excuſeth

excuſeth the Romane Emperor *Sigiſmund*, in that he violated his ſafe conduct. As concerning the which ouerſight, the impudent aſſertions of the Ieſuits of Treuers are worthy the relation, publiſhed in a certaine booke intituled, *The Concertation of the Catholicke Church*, Printed 1583. pag. 4. *Huſſe did require ſafe conduct of Sigiſmund: Sigiſmund ſigned it:* but the *Chriſtian world*, viz. *the fathers of the Councel of Conſtance*, being *Sigiſmunds* ſuperiors, did diſalow it.

Simanch a Biſhop of *Pacia*, that lying ſpirit, bluſhed not to affirme, in his Catholique Inſtitution Cap. 46. Num. 52. That at nō hand, faith was to bee kept towards Heretiques, no not vpon oath. And therefore it was iuſtly decreed; That againſt the tenor of the oath, *Huſſe* and *Ierome* of *Prage* were burned, and a Canon prouided; That an oath made towards an Heretique, was not to be regarded. And at laſt concludeth, That as warning thereof, ought often to bee giuen, ſo is it very neceſſary, that it be often re-iterated, and at no time to be ſilenced, as often as any mention of this peace is obiected.

O! Why ſhould I offend the chaſt eares of any good Chriſtian with ſuch infernall ſtuffe? Smally hath he profited in the ſchoole of Gods word, that in his owne conſcience is not able to decide controuerſies, of much more cunning cariage, then any of theſe. In regard whereof, I will here ceaſe, and affirme, *That in knowing of one, you know all:* ſuch is their malice in ſeruice of the Romiſh ſea, towards Emperor, Kings, Princes, and free States. Let him that hath a mind to bee further and fully ſatiſfied, peruſe the moſt excellent treatiſes printed this preſent yeere 1609.

Notes

For Concluſion vnto theſe plaine and pregnant preſidents of Popiſh tyranny by time and vſurpation practiſed vppon the ſacred Maieſties of mightie Princes, mine Authour, truely to aggrauate their immoderate pride, and further to encourage the aggreeued *parties* to haſten their *Reformation*, for warrantize out of diuers Authours, hee hath culled out many irreſiſtable teſtimonies to prooue, *That Rome is Babylon, and the Biſhop thereof Antichriſt.* Which for that (in mine opinion) in few words they haue beene more liuelier repreſented vnto your conſideratiue conſciences, in his Maieſties moſt excellent Premonition, then which nothing can be ſpoken more fullie, truely, and indifferently, without ſpleene, or ambiguitie.

I will heere craue pardon to ouerpaſſe them, and in lieu therof content you, with ſome few both theorique and practique notes, hatched vpon the ſame grounds, but practiſed vpon other ſtates, of later daies in diuers parts of Chriſtendome.

And firſt of their Ieſuiticall Theoriques, thus collected into order, and eight times printed: as mine Authour affirmeth.

Regulæ Iuris Romani.

1. The Biſhop of *Rome* hath in himſelfe all manner of power, both ſpiritual & temporall: Authority to commād, to forbid, to curſe, & to excōmunicat: al power of puniſhing, right of Election and conferring the lieutenancy of the Empire. Power, to create & depoſe magiſtrates, euen Emperors, Kings & Princes: ſo of al other Potentates, & their ſubiects. Theſe aphoriſms are to be receiued as an article of faith: He that alloweth not, or

beleeueth not ſo much,is to be reputed a moſt deteſtable Heretique.

2. On the contrary , all Eccleſiaſticall perſons, Biſhops,Prelates,Prieſts,Monks,Nuns,and all their temporall goods,their priuiledges and eſtates, are vtterly exempted and freed from all obedience of temporall Lords,from their commands,contributions,and ſuperiorities; and that aſwell in perſonall and reall impleadings, as in ciuill and criminall actions. Neither are they bound to obey Emperor,King,or any Lay Magiſtrate. Yea *Cæſar*,Kings and Princes,ought to inſtruct his fortreſſes rather to eccleſiaſticall perſons, then to Lay Captaines.

3. Albeit the Pope be a Man,yet for that he is Gods vicar on earth(a reaſon wherfore diuine honor is due to him)he can not erre in points concerning Chriſtian doctrine; no although all other eccleſiaſticall fathers, yea and the Councels themſelues ſhould fall into error. An argument,That from Councels we muſt appeale to the Pope;but not *e contra*, From the Pope,to the Councel.

4. The Validity , interpretations, and power of innouating the ſacred Scriptures, reſteth in the boſome of the Pope : but his Holineſſe decrees,as ſimply neceſſary to faith and ſaluation, are immutable, forcible,and obligatory.

5. The conſtitutions,Statutes,ordinances,parliaments, edicts,Confederacies,& al letters patents,of Emperors Kings,Princes,& other eſtates,which fauour any other religion,then the modern Roman ought to be reputed voide and of no force, no, although an oath be interpoſed.

The

6. The Edict of religion concluded by the general consent of the German Nation, is not obligatory; for that it was procured by force. That, it was granted, but to serue the time, as a Delay, or Toleration: viz. vntill the publication of the Councell of Trent, which followed in the yeere 1564.

7. That now the Romanists are to imploy their vtmost indeuours by fire, sword, poison, powder, warre, or any other engine, to suppresse all heretiques, but especially the Lutherans and Caluinists, with their fautors and the politique catholiques, who had rather maintaine peace, then adioyne their forces to the Catholique side in extirpation of heresies.

8. *But this rule is not without exceptiõ:* If they haue cause to feare that the proiect be not likely to second imagination, or that danger or detriment be likely to arise thereof to the Catholique cause: In this case, some regard is to bee had to the time, and a better season to be expected. *Yet some are againe of opinion:* That time is not to be respected. *For what requitall shall a Iesuit returne to so benigne a parent as the Pope, if hee stand tampering vpon the safetie of his conscience, or the security of his life?* And therefore without any longer temporizing, it were better that in all places these Lutherans and Caluinists were speedily banished, suppressed, or vtterly rooted out; so that hereafter not so much as one seed may be left, to restore so much as the remembrance of their Religion.

9. As soon as the Roman-Catholique subiects in their Conciliables haue decreed, *That the Emperor, King or Prince vnder whom they serue, is to be accounted a Tyrant:* then is it lawfull for them to renounce him, and to

hold themſelues free from their oath of allegeance. But if they be deemed to hold their *aſſemblies*; *Then is it granted vnto euery priuate ſubiect, yea praiſe-worthie and meritorious, to murder ſuch a King or Prince*: but with prouiſo, that hee proceede not before hee haue vſed the counſell of ſome *Ieſuit*, or ſuch like *Thevlogian*. Wherein, the Munke *Iames Clement*, who ſlew *Henry* the third with an inuenomed knife, made true vſe of this Rule. And in thoſe dayes, hee was adiudged to haue acted as meritorious an action, that ſhould haue played the like part by his ſucceſſour *Henry* the fourth.

10 If ſubiects haue a *Lutheran* or *Caluiniſt* to their King, or Prince, who indeuoreth to bring them into Hereſies, (you muſt alwaies vnderſtand what Hereſies they meane) they are thoſe ſubiects quitted of homage & fealty towards their ſoueraigne Maſters. To whom it is lawfull and granted to renounce, murder or impriſon ſuch an anointed and high Magiſtrate.

11 That, Emperors, Kings & Princes may be poyſoned by their vaſſals and ſeruants; in caſe the *Theologians*, or *Ieſuits*, being learned and graue men, doe account them for tyrants: prouided, that the concluded party to die, doe not amend, nor procure his owne voluntary deſtruction.

12 The Pope hath the free gift of all the kingdoms, principalities, and territories of all hereticall and infidel Princes: and ſuch donations ſhall be firme and auailable to all conſtructions and purpoſes.

13 It is lawfull and granted to Ieſuits, and all other Catholique Prieſts, in caſe they happen to be examined before heretique Magiſtrates, to vſe equiuocation,

tion, mental reſeruation, falſe names, and counterfeit apparrell: the better to inſinuate, and diſpatch their treacheries.

14 That it is lawfull for Ieſuites, and ſuch like Romaniſts to equiuocate to the demaunds of Magiſtrates: And that as well by oath, as without. But this is to be vnderſtoode, when the Reſpondent doth not account the Demaundant for a competent Iudge or Magiſtrate: Or when, the Reſpondent doth imagine, that the Iudge (though competent) hath no lawfull pretence of examination: Or when hee ſuppoſeth his Aduerſarie, hath no iuſt cauſe of queſtioning him.

15 That ſuch Catholiques are not bound to aunſwere priuate Catholiques from the heart, and with conſcience, but to equiuocate, and anſwer them with double meanings.

16 That this equiuocation is a profitable Arte, and good policy. Wherewith *Martin Azpileneta*, vnto whoſe doctrine *Gregory* the thirteenth gaue the *atteſtation* of *vnanſwerable* and *Holy*: And of whom the Ieſuit *Horat. Turſellinus* in the life of *Lauerius* affirmeth, That *hee was a man excellent for his honeſtie and learning*, congratulateth himſelfe, and boaſteth, that he commanded vnto a *certaine great Prince* the *Apothegme*; *Qui neſcit diſſimulare, neſcit viuere*; *Whereof the ſayde Prince made afterwards great vſe and profite.*

Theſe were the paſſions that troubled our forraigne Nouelliſts; In lieu of many, to auoid prolixity, now let vs proceed to examine at what marke, the Romaniſts on this ſide the ſea doe alſo leuell. And *Saunders*,

for that hee will ſatisfie vs by Scripture; is traced by *Bellarmine*, and magnified by our aduerſaries to be a man of moſt eminent learning, ſhall bee *ſpeaker* for the whole factorie. But by the way you muſt note, that theſe had their priuate reſpects in their hearts, while they held their pens in their hands: So this our Country-man was not deſtitute of his priuate paſſion alſo, which was either an ouer-hard conceit againſt his deereſt Soueraigne Queen *Elizabeth*, out of whoſe Kingdome hee was baniſhed; or an ouer-weeing reſpect, deuoted vnto the ſeruice and gracious aſpect of Pope *Pius* the fift, vnto whom hee ſtood many wayes beholden. Otherwiſe your conſciences would aſſure you, that he would neuer haue broached ſo manifeſt a lye. The worke whereat hee aymed, and the greeuances which diſquieted his penne, your diſcretions may iudge of, by reuoking to minde, the daies wherein hee liued, and the perſonage that then reigned. *Mutato nomine*, the poſitions (you know) as yet are as peremptorily maintained, and therefore aboue the reſt fitteſt to be ſpoken vnto.

With a liuely ſuke to corroborat a bad matter, hee groundeth his firſt authority (his reaſons & arguments as flowing from the bitterneſſe of his priuate braine I will ouer-paſſe) vpon the ſecond booke of Cronicles the 26. Chapter, where we read;

For the more credit, you ſhall haue his owne words.

Oziam regem, cùm ſacerdotum officium vſurpauit, á Pontifice fuiſſe de templo eiectum. Et cum propter idem peccatũ, lepra a Deo percuſſus fuiſſet, coactùm etiam

That *Ozias* the King, when he vſurped vpon the office of the Prieſt-hood, was by the Prieſt caſt out of the temple. And when, for the ſame ſinne he was

fuiſſe ex vrbe diſcedere, & regnum filio renunciare.

Quod non ſponte ſua, ſed ex ſententia ſacerdotis, vrbe, & regni adminiſtratione priuatus fuerit, patet. Nã legimus Leuit. 13. *Quicunque*, inquit Lex, *maculatus fuerit lepra, & ſeperatus eſt ad arbitrium ſacerdotis, ſolus habitabit extra caſtra.*

Cum ergo, hæc fuerit Lex in Iſrael, *& ſimul legimus* 2. *Paralip.* 26. *Regem habitaſſe extra vrbem in domo ſolitaria; & filium eius in vrbe iudicaſſe populum terræ, cogimur dicere, fuiſſe eũ ad arbitrium ſacerdotis ſeparatum, & conſequentèr regnandi authoritate priuatum.*

Si ergo propter lepram corporalem poterat ſacerdos olim regem iudicare, & regno priuare: quare id non poteſt modò propter lepram ſpiritualem, id eſt, propter hæreſim, quæ per lepram figurabatur; vt Auguſt. *decet in queſtionibus Euange-*

ſtrucken by God with leaproſie, he was conſtrained to depart out of the City, & to reſigne the kingdom to his ſonne.

That not of his own accord, but by the ſentence of the high Prieſt, hee was baniſhed the City, and depriued of the gouernment of the kingdome. It appeareth, *Leuit.* 13. whoſoeuer *(ſaith the Law)* ſhall bee touched with the leaproſie, and is ſeperated by the iudgement of the Prieſt, he ſhall dwell by himſelfe without the tents.

Sithence then, this was the Law in *Iſrael:* as alſo that we read 2. Paralip. 26. That the King dwelled without the City in a ſolitary Manſion; and that his ſonne iudged the people of the land within the City: wee muſt of neceſſity confeſſe, that hee was ſequeſtred by the iudgment of the Prieſt, and conſequently depriued of all authority of gouernment.

licis lib.2.quæst. 40. *præsertim cum* 1. *Cor.* 10. *Paulus dicat: Contigisse Iudeis omnia in figuris. Hæc ille.*

If then, in respect of corporall leprosie, the Priest of old might dispose of the King and dispossesse him of his kingdome.

Wherefore now may not the Pope doe the like, in case of spirituall leprosie, viz. for heresie, figured by Leprosie, as saith *S. Augustin*, in his Euangelicall questions *lib.2.quest.*40. Especially when in the first to the *Cor.ca.*10. *Paul* saith: That all things were manifested vnto the Iewes in figures. Hitherto *Saunders*.

Take him at his word, and heere were learning enough to deceiue millions of soules: but examine him by his owne authority, and you shall find him in a miserable taking, vnlesse God be mercifull.

Lib.5.cap. 11. For to prooue it most false, *That Ozias was depriued of his regall Authority by the sole iudgement of the high Priest*: Nothing through the whole History of the Kings is more liuely expressed, then that *Ozias* from the sixteenth yeere of his age, when he began to raign, to the 60. yeere, wherein he died, was perpetuall King. *See the text.* Neither was he at any time during his naturall life depriued of his kingdome.

Without question he dwelled in an House apart: And in that respect, for the nature of his Disease, hee could not dispatch the office of a King, which is of fact. But that bereaued him not of the right of his kingdome, neither of his Kingly capacity; for so wee should deny, that Children being crowned (as in times past *Ioas* and *Iosias* were) and men of full age (if they had fallen into irrecouerable sicknesses, either of mind, or body) to be Kings; sithence the one by no-

As Lewes the eleuenth in France.

nage,

nage, the other by ſickneſſe are neceſſarilie ſequeſtred from managing the State, which conſiſteth in action.

2. But *Ozias* continued king as long as he liued. For the ſcripture ſaith: *In the ſeuen and twentith yeere of* Ieroboam *king of Iſrael, raigned* Azarias (*called alſo* Ozias, *and* Zacharias) *the ſonne of* Amazias *king of Iuda. Sixteen yeere old was he, when he began to raigne, and he raigned fifty two yeeres in Ieruſalem.* 2. *King.* 15. 2. *Paral.* 26.

Behold our Romaniſt here plainely detected of an vntrueth (as I promiſed gone before) and that by the trueſt teſtimony, that humane ſatiſfaction can vnder the concaue of the heauens demand.

But to bewray the true *genius* of impudency, I will yet go farther, to his and his partakers finall confuſion. Witneſſe the 2. *of Kings. v.* 27.

In the two and fiftieth yeere of Azarias *King of* Iuda, Pekan *the ſonne of* Romeliah *raigned ouer* Iſrael *in* Samaria. Heere is plaine dealing, and matter vpon record. How ſhall we here beleeue this Romaniſt, when the ſpirit of trueth and Antiquity giueth vs aſſurance, that he continued King thirty ſix yeers after his Coronation.

To the further verifying wherof (if it were poſſible) *Ioſephus* recordeth in his 9. book of Antiquities, *cap.* 11. That *Azarias* (or *Ozias*) dyed in the ſixty eight yeere of his age, and in the two and fiftith yeere of his raigne: which being moſt true, that he began his raigne at ſixteen yeeres, and dyed at ſixty eight; what teſtimony is obiected in the courſe of his life, whereby we may gather that he was either depoſed or depriued from his legall inheritance? That during the time of his viſitation,

his ſonne was but his deputy, we will prooue anon directly, as it is accuſtomed to be done vnto them, who in like caſes are not able to attend their affaires themſelues. For no leſſe doth the ſame Text auerre: *Ioatham the Kings Sonne was Ouer-ſeer of the Kings Pallace, and gouerned the Kings Houſe, and iudged the people of the Land.*

Here obſerue, that *Ioatham* is ſtiled but the Kings ſonne in the life time, and ſickneſſe of his father; *Gouernour of the Court*, and as I may properly ſpeake, *Lord ſteward of his Fathers houſe*. And why did hee ſit in iudgement amongſt the people? becauſe their complaints could not with conueniency be brought vnto the kings iudicature, by reaſon of his infirmity, and his ſeparation thereupon by the *preſcript commaundement of Gods Law. Leuit.* 13.

3. For confirmation of which laſt point, heare what the Text ſayth: *And Ozias ſlept with his Fathers, and they buried him in the field of the Regall Sepulchres, becauſe he was a leaper. And* Ioatham *his ſonne raigned in his ſtead.*

Here again obſerue, how plainly the ſcripture leadeth vs in the way of truth: Euen now, *It* termes *Ioatham* the *Kings ſonne*, the kings ſteward, or ſeruant: But now, after the *deceaſe of his father* (and not before) *It* ſaith: *Regnare cœpit*: He *began* to raigne.

Yet *Ozias* was ſeparated by the commaund of the high Prieſt? True: but that was alſo commanded by the liuely voice of the Diuine Law: But that he was depoſed or depriued from his legall inheritance, his kingly authority, or inforced to reſigne his eſtate *to his ſonne before his death*: No man will auouch it, vnleſſe a bloody

bloody and passionate Romanist. The simple know, that Soueraignety and Gouernement are of no lesse difference then *proprietas and possession*, or as I may speake, an estate determinable, and an estate in Fee. Soueraignety is alwaies incorporated vnto the person of the King, is as it were the soule of a kingdome, and inseparable from the right thereto: But Gouernment, Lieutenancy, or procuration may bee diuested vppon deputies. As in the nonage of kings; or in times of daungerous sicknesses, those who are assigned to take care of the waighty affaires of the kingdome, are stiled Deputies, Protectors, Tutors, Lieutenants, Viceroyes, or Gouernors, neither propounding, dispatching, nor negotiating any publique businesse in their owne names, but vnder the stile and seale of the yong, or diseased Soueraigne.

His second authority is taken from the second of *Chronicles* the 23. Chapter, which because in truth it is but impertinent, though most maliciously framed; I will recite in our vulgar tongue only.

At what time Athalia *gouerned the kingdome by tyranny, and maintained the worship of* Baal, Ioada *the High Priest called vnto him the Centurions and souldiers, and commaunded them to slay* Athalia, *And in her stead they crowned* Ioas *king.* Saunders.

That the Priest perswaded not, but commanded, it is apparant by those words in the fourth of Kings, and eleuenth Chapter. And the men of warre did according vnto all that Ioada *the High priest commanded them. Againe by those in the second of* Chronicles *the three and twentith Chapter. But* Ioada *the high Priest going out vnto the*

*Centurions & leaders of the Army, ſaid vnto them; Bring her forth (*Athalia *the Queene) from the precinct of the Temple, and let her be ſlaine without by the ſword.*

That the cauſe of the depoſition and killing of Athalia, *was not onely her tyrannie, but alſo her maintenance of the worſhip of* Baal; *It is proued by the words immediatly placed after her ſlaughter. Whereupon, ſaith the Scripture, All the people entred into the houſe of* Baal, *and deſtroyed it, and broke downe the Altars and the images thereof. They alſo ſlew* Mathan *the Prieſt of* Baal *before the Altar.*

That this example of *Ioada* and *Athalia*, do nothing concerne the marke, whereat they ſo prepoſterouſly and maliciouſly leuel: or the moderne controuerſie of Papal intruſion ouer Kings and Princes, we wil reſolue you forthwith.

For the Example of *Athalia*, is of a party, who vſurped vpon a Kingdome without any lawfull pretenſion, ſaue meere and barbarous tyrannie; by force, by wickedneſſe, and the cruell murder of the royall Progenie. In which caſe, the Preſident was ſo abominable, that euen without the commandement of *Ioada*, it might haue beene lawfull for euery priuate Magiſtrate to haue iuſtified her death: but for that ſuch a deſignment ſeemed dangerous and difficult to be executed vpon her, who was mother to the deceaſed King *Ahaziah*; therefore was it needfull to haue vſed the counſell and aſſiſtance of *Ioada* the high Prieſt. Or at leaſt, of ſome ſuch eminent perſon, who for the Honour of his place, or the reputation of vprightneſſe, was of power to aſſemble and ſtirre vp the ſouldiers and people to ſo iuſtifiable an action.

But that the Act was executed as well by *perſwaſion* as *commaund*; It appeareth by that which was ſpoken: *Ioada the high Prieſt ſent, and tooke the Centurions and men of warre vnto him, and cauſed them to come into the Temple*; Pepigitque cum eis fœdus: *And he couenanted with them*. Now I hope that ſo abſolute a Commander, as our Romaniſts will make this high Prieſt to be, would haue ſcorned to haue capitulated, if hee could haue commanded. Beſides, the words, *we will*, or *command*, are accuſtomably vſed by thoſe, who in faction, or in any other publique buſineſſe obtaine the prime-place of imployment. 2. Kings 4.

What then may be found in this example to inforce *Ioadas*, or the Popes omnipotency, for innouation of States or Kingdoms? What is brought to proue ſo dangerous an aſſertion. This is a true preſident to be inforced againſt a Tiranneſſe or an vſurper. But there is a great diſſimilitude betweene legal Lords, or true proprietaries, and theeues; or the inuaders of another mans poſſeſſion.

If there were any cauſe beſides tyrannie, materiall to depoſe, or ſley *Athalia*, what is that to vs. Let it be inforced againſt people guilty of like offences, *viz.* thoſe that worſhip, and defend the worſhip of *Baal*, and the hoaſt of Heauen. It is ſufficient, that ſhee was a Tyranneſſe, and an iniurious Vſurper vppon an other mans Kingdome; without that, that vpon her part there remained any obſtacle, or impediment of Lawe, but that ſhee might bee depoſed from her throane, and ſlaine. The like whereof, I hope, no good Chriſtian will affirme concerning any lawfull King; whoſe ſacred perſon (although blemiſhed by many

humane infirmities) the *Right* of *Inheritance*, the *Maiestie* of his *Place*, and the *capacity* of his *calling*, ought alwaies, and that for conſcience ſake, to protect & defend from iniurie, infamie, and humane controlement. To which, let all true Chriſtians ſay, *Amen.*

Now to their practique.

NOw that I haue epitomized vnto your conſiderations the theorems, rules, and policies of this inforced vſurpation: I will alſo make manifeſt vnto you by true booke caſes, how they haue practiſed vpon theſe *Theorems*, throughout all the kingdoms of Chriſtendome.

Spaine.1568. Chro. Belg.

In *Spaine*, vpon ſuſpition of *hereſie*, they ſo ouerawed the conſcience of *Philip* the ſecond, that they cauſed the vncompaſſionate father, in a bath to open the veines of *Charles* his eldeſt ſonne, a Prince of admirable expectation; there to bleede out his deereſt life. Now to explane vnto you, what *hereſie* this noble yong Prince had committed, let me report vnto you (if *fame* ſay truth) that it aroſe forſooth vpon his hard vſage towards the Clergie; In diſmounting them riding vpon their pleaſures, from their excellent Ienets and ſtately Mules; and ſending them home to their ſtudies; beſtowing theſe beaſts vpon ſome of his more worthy followers. Or peraduenture vpon iealouſie, that manifeſting too much of the Grandfathers ſpirit, in future times, *He* might call *them* to account, as did *Charles* the fifth. *Herman* once Archbiſhop of *Colein*,

to

to say for himselfe what he could, against the accusations libelled against *Him*, by his Clergie, and the Vniuersitie. I assure you, farre lesse sinnes, then these, are able to cast the best man liuing into the bottomlesse pit of their fierie Inquisition, *Vnde nulla redemptio.*

Who were of Councell vnto *Sebastian*, the last of house of *Portugal*, to vndertake that wofull, but as they termed it, that most meritorious iourney into *Africa*? To vnderstand the true motiues whereof, I will say no more, but referre you ouer to the Iesuits *Cata.* fo. 709. *Portugal.* 1578. *Chro. Bel.*

Who but the same brood of Iesuits made away *Iohn* of *Albret*, Queene *Dowager* of *Nauarre*, the very *eye* of the *French* Protestants, by impoisoned Pills; which an *Italian*, the Kings Apothecary at *Paris*, prepared for her? *France.* 1572. *Hist. Gal.*

Who but the brochers of such impieties, were the instruments of that most infernall resolution; vnder the colour of so solemne and Prince-like a marriage, to contriue the death of the *Nauarrois*, and the massacre of so many braue Princes and Gentlemen, of the Religion through the whole territories of *Fraunce*; And that without any regard or touch of conscience, in abusing and violating the oath of safe conduct, religiously swore vnto, by the King himselfe. *Anno.* 1572. *Hist Gvi*

By what sort of men, I pray you, was *Peter Barr.* suborned, and obliged by Sacrament, trayterously to haue murdered *Henry* the fourth? And by whom, let me aske you, is the Auditory at this day admonished, but to make vse of some small patience, For within few dayes, God himselfe is to make his personall appearance amongst vs, to worke I know not what, miracles, to the confusion of Heretiques. *Anno.* 1589. *Chro. Bel.*

Was

Anno.1594. Cat.Ies.482. Chro.Belg.

Was not *Iohn Chastelius*, a yong man of nineteene yeers of age, and a nouice in *Claremount* Colledge, fully satisfied, thinke you, by the resolutions and incouragements of these persons, and vpon the foresaid positions; before he would hazard his portion in heauen, to vndertake the slaughter of the said king of *France* & *Nauar*? But as God would, he missed his throat, & by the wauering of his hand, strooke out but one of his teeth: affirming that he was but as another *Ehud*, apointed to murder *Eglon* the wicked king of the Moabites.

Eug.1588. 1594.1597. Cat Ies.436. & 448.

By whome were so many and so often treacheries plotted not only to haue beene executed by strangers against Queene *Elizabeth*, but also by her owne seruants, namely *Parry*, *Squier*, *Lopez*, *Yorke*, *Williams*, and *Patrike Cullen*: By whome was her sacred Maiesty excommunicated, her peace disturbed, her subiects assayled, her Realme betrayed, and her life set at sale to bee taken away by any meanes; by poyson, by massiue rewards, or any other kind of violence what euer? I will not stand to dilate hereupon. The world I hope is againe and againe satisfied with the proofe hereof. It yet freshly remembreth, what ouertures were made, euen but yesterday, and by whome, vnto the Spanish king for a second Inuasion. And as yet, *Cælum, non animum mutant, qui trans mare currunt.*

Anno.1607.

For, it is as cleere as day, that none but men moulded and sold ouer to the worst of wickednesse, would euer haue imagined or consented to haue blowen vp a State-house; And that vpon the first day, and first sitting, when in certainty they knew, that of necessity the King and Prince would be present, the assembly fullest, and the massacre bloodiest.

Who

Who were the instruments, that *Sigismund* K. of *Polonia* and *Sweland* after the death of his father returned into *Sweland*, there against the tenor of his oath, to root out the Lutheran Religion as they terme it? who were the authors of the vnseasonable commotions in *Liuonia*? who accouncelled him by surprise to inuade the kingdome, and almost to haue lost his life, as he hath now at last the kingdome? And by whose seducements hath hee attempted so many innouations in *Polonia*?

Sweueland. 1593. *Or Pol b.4. Præf.cat.Iesu.* *Polon.*

To what shall we attribute, but to their daungerous instigations, that *Demetrius* beeing returned out of *Poland* into *Moscouie*, in attempting to alter the receiued Religion of the Moscouits, was himself in one day depriued of life and Empire, with an infinit number of his nobles and followers?

Moscouia.

Whom should we accuse, but these furies, for the murder of the worthy Prince of *Orange*, shot to death by *Balthasar Gonhard*, before prepared for blood by the assurance of these cunning *Garnets*?

Netherland.

What should I dull your eares with these vnpleasant discourses? If you list, your selues may reade at leysure the examinations of *Peter de Pennes*, *Michzel Renicher*, and *Peter de Four*, against the life of *Graue Maurice*, the aforesaid Prince his Son, for maintaining the cause of Religion?

I could also, bring you presidents from *Transiluania* 1607. *from Bohemia*, 1608. *from Austria* 1609. *Bauaria*, 1592. *Argentina* 1698. *Aquisgran*, 1607 *Donauerd and Venice* 1606. but that I am very vnwilling to tire your patience with the desperate resolutions of these irregular and faithlesse men. Faithlesse to God: for they vow

religion and humility, but worke treachery and affect ſuperiority . And irregular amongſt men, for they preach faith, and adminiſter oathes; and yet if any thing diſpleaſe them, they ſend ſoules to deſperation, and make port-ſale of periury. And therefore to conclude, I will for your perpetuall remembrance, in the perſon of one, deſcribe the very *genius* of the whole fraternity in theſe ſhort remembrances following.

Seductor Sweco: Gallo *Sicarius*: Anglo
Proditor: Imperio *Explorator*: *Dauus* Ibero:
Italo *Adulator*: *Dixi teres ore ſuitam.*

He that hath oft the Sweth-land-Pole *ſeduced*:
Murdred the French: *And* Englands-King *abuſed*:
A ſpie for Auſtria: *A cunning knaue for* Spaine,
And ſooths th' Italian States *to Popiſh gaine*;
Is All one Man, aud Ieſuit *is his name.*
And what yee read of Henry, Frederick,
Of Otho Great: *and their Succeſsion.*
Gainſt [a] Philip Faire, *and the* [b] twelfe Lodowic,
French Kings: Gainſt [c] Henry *th'eight of Albion,*
And his diuineſt child [d] Eliza *Queene*:
With many more of Nations far and wide,
Be bold to ſay: Like meaſure *to haue beene*
In high proportion meated from That ſide.

[a] *By Boniface the eight.*
[b] *By Iulius-the ſecond.*
[c] *By Clement the ſeuenth and Paul the third.*
[d] *By Pius the fift.*

THE

The Tables to this Booke: The first declaring how *many Emperors haue beene either Excommunicated,* or constrained to kisse his Holinesse Feete.

Emperours	*Otho the fourth.*	Excommunicated by	*Innocent the third.*
	Henry the fourth.		*Gregorie the 7.*
	Henry the fift.		*Paschal the second.*
	Frederick the first		*Adrian the fist.*
	Philip the sonne of Frederick.		*Alexander the 3.*
	Frederick the secõd.		*Innocent the third thrice by Gre. the 9.*
	Conradus the fourth		*Innocent the fourth*
	Lodowick the Bauarian.		*Iohn the 22. Benedict the 12. and Clement the VI.*

Emperours	*Charles the Great.*	Constrained to kisse the feet of	*Adrian the Pope.*
	Iustinian Emperor of Constantinople.		*Stephen the second.*
	Luit Prandus king of Lomb.		*Iohn the xvij.*
	Crescentius Consul. &c.		*Iohn the xvij.*
	Otho the first.		*Alexander the third agroose, &c.*
	Frederick the first.		*Paschal the second.*
	Henry the fift.		*Of Martin the fift, and Eugenius the fourth.*
	Sigismund.		*Of Clement the seuenth.*
	Charles the fift.		

The ſecond, deuided into Sections; *ſeuerally epitomizing the liues of the* Popes, with the vices whereunto euery one hath in particular beene addicted, *viz.* who haue beene,

1 *Atheists.*
2 *Arrians.*
3 *Magitians or Coniurers.*
4 *Blaſphemers.*
5 *Forſwearers and equiuocators.*
6 *Turkiſh Pentioners.*
7 *Mad-men and tyrants.*
8 *Warriours and bloud-ſuccours.*
9 *Traytours and mouers of ſeditions.*
10 *Parricids and impoyſoners.*
11 *Whoremaſters.*
12 *Adulterers.*
13 *Inceſtuous perſons.*
14 *Sodomites.*
15 *Pandars.*
16 *Bawdes.*
17 *Baſtards.*
18 *Drunkards.*
19 *Couetous perſons.*
20 *Church-robbers.*
21 *Simonianists.*
22 *Ambitious perſons.*
23 *Monſters.*
24 *Vnlearned perſons.*

Liues of the Popes.

1. *Atheists.*

LEo the tenth: who hearing Cardinall *Bembo* speaking to a point concerning, *The ioyfull message of our Lord*, answered most dissolutely; *It is well knowen to the world through all ages, in how great stead that fable of Christ hath profited vs and our associates.* This man neither beleeued heauen, nor hell, after our departure out of this life.

And such were *Alexander* the tenth, *Siluester* the second, *Paul* the third, *Benedict* the nineteenth, *Iohn* the thirteenth, *Clement* the seuenth, & *Gregory* the seuenth.

2. *Arrians.*

Anastasius, the eleuenth: *Liberius* and *Felix.*

3. *Magitians and Coniurers.*

ALexander the sixth: this man made a league with the diuell, vpon promise to procure him the Papacie.

Paul the 3. obtained the garland in Astrology, and in that kind of speculatiõ, which is assisted by the ministery of diuels. He altogether kept familiar acquaintance

with Negromancers, & ſuch like notable impoſtures, and ſtarre-gazers, to learne the faults of himſelfe and his children.

Silueſter the ſecond, as well ſeene in theſe diabolical Arts, as his Predeceſſors, gaue himſelfe wholly to the diuell, vpon condition to aduance him to the Papacie.

Benedict the ninth, obtained the ſame ſea by charms, ſpels & inchantments. Before his inſtalment, in company of his aſſociates, in woods and remote places he was accuſtomed to inuoke euill ſpirits, and by Negromantike toyes to worke women to his filthy luſt.

Iohn the thirteenth, at dice would call vpon the diuell, and in merriment carouſe a cup of wine to his diuelſhip.

Of *Clement* the ſeuenth, we read that he was a Geomantique and Simonianiſt.

Gregory the ſeuenth, laboured the Papacie by the ſame Arts. He was the firſt that euer preſumed to excommunicate an Emperour. And that was *Henry* the fourth, vnto the end of whoſe legend, if you pleaſe, you may with pleaſure and to good purpoſe add theſe true and vncontrolable records.

With the forme of his Outlary vpon earth, we will not trouble you; but with his impudent preſumption in baniſhing his ſoule from heauen (a place wherein I feare) ſuch perſons haue ſmalleſt intereſt, *ad perpetuam rei memoriam*, I will not faile to informe you. Then thus.

Agite igitur Apoſtolorum ſanctiſſimi Principes, & quod dixi veſtra authoritate

Courage then ye moſt choſen Princes of the Apoſtles: And what I haue

interpoſita, confirmate, vt omnes nunc demũ intelligãt, ſi poteſtis in cælo ligare & ſoluere, in terra quoque imperia regna, principatus, & quicquid habere mortales poſſunt, auferre & dare vos poſſe. Ediſcant nunc Reges huius exemplo, & omnes ſeculi principes, quid in cælo poſitis, quantiq; apud Deum ſitis, ac deinceps timeant ſanctæ Eccleſiæ mandata contemnere. Hoc autem iudicium cito in Henricum *exercete, vt intelligant omnes, iniquitatis ſilium non fortuitò, ſed veſtra opera è regno cadere. Hoc tamen à vobis optauerim, vt pœnitentia ductus, in die iudicij veſtro rogatu, gratiam à Domino conſequatur. Actum Romæ Nonis Martij; indictione tertia.*

thundered by the deputation of your authorities, ratifie I beſeech you; that now at laſt all people may vnderſtand, that as ye are of power in heauen to binde and to looſe: ſo likewiſe that you are of no leſſe potencie on earth, to giue and to take Empires, Kingdomes and Honors, with whatſoeuer the inhabitants of this world may peculiarly challenge. By the example of this man let Kings and Princes of the earth now learn, what are your prerogatiues in heauen, & what your credits with God, that henceforth they may feare to contempe the awards of Holy Church. Execute I beſeech you, this ſentence with ſpeede vpon *Henry*, that all the world may perceiue, that this ſonne of iniquity was diſinthronized by your operation, and not by deſtinie. Yet thus much I requeſt of your clemencies, that after repentance, in the day of iudgement, he may obtaine pardon of our Lord at your interceſſion. Giuen at *Rome* the Nones of March the third indiction.

To

to the rareneſſe and nouelty of which preſident, (to auoid exception) and to confound ſuch quarrelſome ſpirits, let them heare, what the wiſedome of that vpright Biſhop *Friſingenſis*, a man for diſcent, zeale and learning moſt eminent, reporteth: and the rather for that he was almoſt an eie-witneſſe vnto thoſe times.

Lego & relego (ſaith he) *Romanorum regum & Imperatorum geſta, & nuſquam inuenio quemquam eorum ante hunc a Romano Pontifice Excommunicatum vel regno priuatum.* I read and read againe the Chronicles of the Roman kings and Emperors, and in no age can find that euer a Romane Biſhop excommunicated or depriued any one of them from his kingdome before this man: meaning Hildebrand.

And again in his firſt book of the geſts of *Frederick*:

Gregorius ſeptimus (ſaith hee) *qui tunc vrbis Romæ Pontificatum tenebat, eundem Imperatorem tanquam a ſuis deſtitutum, anathematis gladio feriendum decernit. Cuius rei nouitate eò vehementius indignatione motum ſuſcepit Imperium, quò nunquam ante hæc tempora huiuſmodi ſententiam in Principem Romanorum promulgatam cognouerat.* *Gregory* the ſeauenth ſaith he, at that time Pope of Rome reſolued to ſmite with the ſword of Excommunication the foreſaid Emperor as forſaken of his people. At the nouelty whereof the Empire was ſo much the rather mooued with indignation, for that before thoſe times, it neuer had known ſuch a ſentence to haue been pronounced againſt the Prince of the Romans.

Now with what ſequell this *Hildebrand* ſtriued maſteries to arrogate this temporal authority from *Henry* the

the fourth. *Otto Friſingenſis* alſo(whom *Bellarmine*,not vndeſeruedly,for his parentage,his learning and integrity of life,tearmeth *Moſt noble*)doth relate vnto you.

But what miſchiefes, what warres, what hazarding of battailes followed hereupon ? How often was miſerable Rome *beſieged,taken,and ſacked ? It greeueth mee to record how a Pope was ſet vp againſt a Pope, a King againſt a King . Finally the turmoyle of this tempeſtuous ſeaſon produced ſo many miſeries,ſo many ſchiſmes,ſo many ſhipwracks of ſoules and bodies, that thoſe times onely, what by the maſſacres of perſecution,and what by the perpetuity of miſchiefes,* gaue ſufficient arguments to approoue the infelicity of humane miſery. So that,thoſe daies were compared by a certaine eccleſiaſticall writer to the palpable and darke miſts of Ægypt. For the foreſaid Biſhop *Gregory* was inforced from the Regall City,and *Gibert* of *Rauenna* was thruſt into his place.

Hereunto,ſaith one of the tender hearted Romaniſts, that it mought be that *Gregory* did this vpon a good intenſion of the heart,let God iudge; but it can not be defended, that he did it iuſtly,diſcreetly,or by warrant of his calling; but that he erred foully following the humours and counſels of men,in arrogating that vnto himſelfe which was none of his due. Where by the way our aduerſaries may learne in auoiding of ſhedding of Chriſtian bloud, that notwithſtanding all the Pope could do by his excommunications, and curſes, for fiue and twenty yeeres ſpace,a great faction of the Clergy and Laytie ſided with the Emperour, ſo that *Gregories* ouerſight could be no ſmall fault,in that he called not into his conſideration; *That it was the office of ſo eminent a paſtor to haue ſtudied all the points of chri-*

ſtianity, peace and humility, by ſuffering the faults of one man rather to eſcape vnpuniſhed, then to haue ingaged the innocent and harmeleſſe people through his priuate deſire of reuenge, in an Ocean of misfortunes.

For it is manifeſt that all which we go about in the feruour of zeale, and to good intents, is not alwayes done to good purpoſe. *Moſes* in zeale to his countryman ſlew the Egyptian, yet he ſinned. *Oza* in zeale to vphold the Arke of God touched it, and dyed. *Peter* in zeale to our Lord and his maſter ſtroke off *Malchas* his eare, and yet he was blamed. An inconſiderate zeale doth oftentimes produce miſchief and inconuenience.

In regard whereof, he ought not to haue excommunicated the Emperour, in participation of whoſe offence ſuch multitudes of Chriſtian ſoules were intereſſed, that without apparant ſchiſme, and diſunion of vnity in the Church and common weale, it could not be remedied. This is but the ſame Councell which for many Ages paſt, that great light of the Church *S. Auguſtine* did religiouſly and aduiſedly admoniſh vs of, and prooued the warrant thereof out of the writings of *S. Paul*. Whoſe opinion the Church from thencefoorth held ſo forceable, reaſonable, and acceptable, that *it vouchſafed to auouch it in warrant of their Canons.*

Lib. 3. cap. 2. cont. ep. parmeniani.

Can. Non potest. 23. q. 4.

For confirmation whereof let vs take notice how *Hildebrand* behaued himſelfe after the feeling-ſmart of theſe monſtrous miſeries, by his troubled conſcience, and the teſtimony of antiquity, with reiection of bare aſſertions, and cauills of *dubiæ fidei*.

Pope *Hildebrand* (ſaith our Authour) *alias Gregorie* the ſeuenth, died in baniſhment at *Salerne*. Of this man I find it thus recorded. *Volumus vos ſcire, &c. We will*

In Cronograph. Anno. 1085.

that

that you who are to be carefull ouer the Eccleſiaſticall flocke, take notice, that our Apoſtolicall Lord Hildebrand (*called alſo* Gregory) *now vpon the point of death, called vnto him one of the twelue Cardinalls, whom hee beſt loued. And he confeſſed to God, to* Saint Peter, *and before the whole Church, that he had greeuouſly ſinned in his paſtorall Office, committed vnto his charge to gouerne; and that by the perſwaſion of the diuell hee had raiſed greate wrath and hatred amongſt the ſonnes of Men. Then at laſt he ſent his foreſaide Confeſſor vnto the Emperor and the vniuerſall Church, that they would deigne to inuocate his pardon, for that he perceiued that his end drew nigh. And preſentlie he put on the Angelicall veſtment, and releaſed and reuerſed vnto the Emperour, and all Chriſtian people aliue and dead, Clarkes and Laie, the Cenſures of all his Curſes. And commanded all his followers to depart from the houſe of* Deodoricus, *and the Emperors friends to aproach.*

Such were *Iohn* the nineteenth twentith, and one & twentith. *Sergius* the fourth. *Benedict* the eight. *Silueſter* the third. *Gregory* the ſixt. *Clement* the ſecond. *Damaſus* the ſecond. *Leo* the ninth. *Victor* the ſecond. *Stephanus* the ninth. *Benedict* the tenth. *Nicholas* the ſecond. *Alexander* the ſecond. For from *Silueſter* the ſecond to the time of that moſt infamous impoſtor *Gregorie* the ſeuenth. All the Roman Biſhops applied thoſe ſtudies, and therein far excelled the Ægiptian ſorcerers.

Sig. In Cronograph. Anno. 1085.

4. *Blaſphemers.*

LEO the tenth of whom before.

Iulius the third. This man made it his common exercise to reaſon in contempt of the Deity. Was

especially delighted in the flesh of Pork and Peacocks: But when the Physitian admonished him to refraine from Hogges-flesh, for that it was an enemie to the gowty disease, wherewith his Holinesse was at that time afflicted, and neuertheless would not abstaine. His Physitian, I say, forbad his Steward to serue vp any more Porke. Which when his Holinesse obserued, he demaunded for his dish. His Steward made answere, that his Physitian had forbad it. The Bishop replied, *Al dispetto didio,* bring me my Pork.

Againe, when at dinner time, hee had espied a Peacock, which was not toucht. *Keepe me* (quoth he) *this seruice colde for my supper, and let it be ready by an houre; for I meane to inuite certaine guests.* But at supper perceiuing many hote smoaking Peacocks, but missing his colde one; all pale with anger hee belched out most horrible blasphemy against the diuine Maiesty. Which when one of the guest-Cardinals obserued; *Let not your Holinesse* (quoth he) *be so angry for so small a trifle.* Whereto *Iulius* replied: *If God were so farre forth angry about an Apple, that therefore he spared not to cast our first Parents out of Paradise, shall it not be lawfull for me (his Vicar) to be offended for being cousoned of my Peacock, sithence a Peacock is of more worth then many Apples.*

5. *For swearers and equiuocators.*

THe Papal Canons doe teach, that the Romane Bishop, may absolue frō oaths, dispense with vowes, and release a periured person. Whereupon, it is not to be wondred at, to finde so many periured and faithlesse Papists, swarming in euery corner of the world.

The Councel of *Constance* ouer-awed the Emperor *Sigis-*

Sigiſmond (to the violation of his oath) to deale with *Iohn Hus*, according to the fore-ſaid Canon, & by that law to burne him: *vt ſupra.*

Gregory the thirteenth, by the *Breue* wrote vnto the Papiſts of *England*, that *Rebus ſic ſtantibus*, they might yeeld their obedience to the Queene. Which intimateth nothing elſe; but that for the preſent they may ſweare, and vpon occaſion dally with their oathes as them beſt ſeemeth.

Iulius the ſecond, according to the teſtimony of *Guicciardine* in his eight book, maintained, That *the Romiſh Biſhop might violate his pleighted faith*. And this *Maxime* he taught as well by example, as manner of life. For he not onely by falſifying his faith, couſoned the Cardinals of a huge maſſe of treaſure, but alſo by the treachery and equiuocation, ingaged the *French* and *Venetians* in manifold incumbrances.

Siluerius, againſt his oath of allegeance ſworne vnto the Emperour, did his beſt to betray the City to the Gothes.

Gregory the ſecond, hauing forgotten his oath giuen vnto the Emperor, cauſed *Italy* to reuolt, and confederated with his enemies.

Gregory the ſeuenth, in a moment forgot what hee had religiouſly promiſed and ſworne to effect.

Paſcal the ſecond, after a peace ſworn with the Emperor in ſpecial & preciſe termes, as ſoone as his Popeſhip had leuied his forces, he charged his Maieſtie.

Formoſus, by breaking his oath, cauſed moſt cruell tragedies.

Alexander the ſixth, for his falſe faith (more infamous then Punique) was moſt renowmed.

Leo the the tenth, againſt his ſworne promiſe, baniſhed the houſe of *Ruver* out of the Dutchy of *Vrban*.

Clement the ſeuenth, had ſmall regard of his faith.

Paul the fourth, and *Pius* the fifth, excommunicated the Engliſh, for not reuolting from their oathes of alegeance.

Gregory the fourteenth, threatens that he would doe the like againſt the ſubiects of *France*.

Remember the battell of *Varna*.

6. *Turkiſh Penſioners.*

Clement the ſixth, was euermore very carefull, to keepe the Chriſtian Princes at iarres, ſo that they could neuer intend to prepare their mindes to thinke vpon the Turk.

Alexander the ſixth, being willing to make good his ſupremacy, called in the *Turk* to aſſiſt him againſt the King of *Erance*.

Alexander the third, betrayed *Frederick* to the *Sultan*.

Gregory the ninth, by his letters requeſted the *Soldan*, not to make reſtitution of the Holy land, but rather to ſlay the Emperour, then warring in the Eaſterne parts.

7. *Mad-men and Tyrants.*

John the thirteenth, put out the eies of ſome of his Cardinals; ſome he depriued of their tongues; ſome of their fingers, hands, noſes and priuities.

Boniface the ſeuenth, by an ambuſh tooke *Iohn* the fif-

fifteenth priſoner; put out his eies; committed him to priſon, ſtarued him, and ſo became Maſter of the Pope-dome.

Paſchal the ſecond, excommunicated *Henry* the fourth, being a moſt religious Prince: prouoked the Sonne to riſe in armes againſt the Father. And to put no period to his helliſh Nature, ſo infinite was his rage towards the dead carcaſſe, that he commanded it to be digged vp, to be caſt out of the Church, and to want Chriſtian buriall by the terme of fiue yeares.

Hiſtories record, that *Nicholas* the third was priuy, nay, author of that *Sicilian* maſſacre, from whence ſprung the prouerb: *veſperæ ſiculæ.*

Iohn the fourteenth: This man deliuered vnto the Hang-man, one *Peter* the Præfect of *Rome*: Who ſtripping him to the skinne, and ſhauing his beard, by his fatherhoods cõmandement, tied him vnto a Gallowes for a whole dayes ſpace by the haire of the head. Then ſetting him on an Aſſe, with his face reuerſed, and his hands faſtened vnto the beaſts taile, hee commanded him ſo to be ſhewed in ſpectacle round about the Citie; To be ſcourged, and afterwards baniſhed into *Germanie*.

Gregory the ninth, his fury againſt the Emperor was vnappeaſeable, and would as farre as in him lay, haue vtterly confounded him.

Vrban the ſixth, vpon a creation of nine new Cardinals, caſt ſeuen of the olde into priſon; ſewed fiue in ſacks, and caſt them into the ſea.

Boniface the eighth: ſuch (in partiality of his owne faction) was the vnquenchable flame of his rancour towards the *Gibellins*, that vpon report, how ſome of the

ſide

ſide had ſeated themſelues at *Genoa*; himſelfe made haſt to the place, finally to haue deſtroyed them, and rooted out their race from the memory of Man. Vpon Aſhwedneſday being according vnto cuſtome to miniſter Aſhes vnto the people, the Biſhop of the place (whom he knew to be a Gibelline) approached him, & vpon his knees deſired his Benediction. Vnto whom his Holineſſe (notwithſtanding the reuerence of the place, the frequency of the people, and his religious calling) where he ſhould haue ſprinkled the Aſhes vpon his bald pate, he caſt them wholly into his eies: Saying: *Remember man that thou art a Gibelline, and with the Gibellines thou ſhalt be turned into Aſhes.*

Innocent the 7. This man tooke ſuch delight in gouerning his affaires with tumult and diſorder, that when the Romane Citizens deſired him to reſtore vnto them their auncient priuiledges; to ſurrender the Capitol; to put an end to the Schiſme; to finiſh the warres, and to bury all memory of ſeditions. Hee in ſhew of friendſhip requeſted the petitioners to attend his Reſolue at his Nephew *Lodowicks* houſe (as good had they beene to haue gone to the hang man) then dwelling in the Hoſpitall of *S. Eskerit*. For foorthwith he murdred eleuen of them, and caſt their dead bodies out at the windowes, ſaying: *That by any other counſell it was not poſſible to finiſh the warre and the Schiſme.*

Innocent the fourth. As full of fanaticall frenſie, accurſed *Fredericke*; depriued him of all Imperiall dignity; abſolued his people from their oaths of obedience; inſinuated with them to chooſe another: and to further his vile purpoſes, deuiſed infinit ſcandals to worke the Commons.

Clement

Clement the ſixt that vnmanerly presbyter, rather then he would giue ouer his furious and ſelfe-wild intendments againſt the ſacred maieſty of an annointed Emperor, faſtned his libells vpon euery Church dore. Proteſting that vnleſſe his maieſty would within three daies take order to ſatiſfie his pleaſure, he would impoſe vpon him his moſt grieuous cenſures. Againſt what poore groome could he proceed more baſely?

Stephanus the ſixt. Such was his malice againſt the name of *Formoſus*, that preſently he abrogated his decrees; fruſtrated his acts, and continuated his rage ſo far forth againſt the dead Biſhop; that calling a Synod he cauſed the body to be digged vp, to be diſrobed of all Epiſcopall habit, and clothed in ſecular raiment, to be deliuered to lay buriall: From his right hand he cut off two of his fingers, and caſt them into *Tiber*.

Sergius the third. This man after eight yeeres reſt, cauſed the body of the ſaid *Formoſus* again to be digged vp: to be placed vpon a papall ſeig, & to be araigned & condemned to capitall puniſhment, as if he had beene liuing. From the foreſaide hand he cauſed the other three fingers to be chopt off, and together with the remainder of his body to be throwne into the Riuer, as vnworthy of common buriall. He condemned all his actions, ſo that they who by him had bin admitted vnto his holy orders, were again fain to be readmitted by his preſent Popeſhip.

8. *Warriors and Bloodſuckers.*

Innocent the ſecond after his inſtallment, accounted it his holieſt proiect to ſeaſon his New and high calling with the deſtruction of *Roger* Duke of *Sicil*. Whereupon he flyeth to Armes, marſhalleth his for-

ces,and ſpeedily vanquiſheth. But by the vnexpected comming in of *Roger* his ſonne, his Popeſhip is taken,and his Cardinals made priſoners.

Iulius the ſecond, in ſeauen yeeres ſpace was the cauſe of the ſlaughter of two hundred thouſand Chriſtian ſoules.He limited a reward to any man that could kill a Frenchman.Marching out of the City accoutred with *Pauls* ſword, and other ſuch holy Furniture, to fight againſt the French and the confederate Princes: He vnſheathed the blade,and caſt the Keyes into *Tiber* ſaying: *Sithence Peters keies can no longer ſtead vs, welcome the ſword of good* S. Paul.

Gregory the ninth,receiuing newes of the recouery of *Ieruſalem*,cauſed the Emperors Embaſſadors to be murdred.

Clement the ſixt to effectuate his proper deſeignes, from time to time ſowed occaſions of warre & diſcord amongſt the Chriſtian Princes:and rather then to faile of his purpoſes, hee would not ſpare to ſet them on working by maſſiue promiſes,by entertainment,by trecheries and many cunning deuiſes.

Clement the fourth without either formall proceeding or obiection of reaſon, conſented that the Noble Emperonr *Conradus*, the laſt of the houſe of *Sweuia*, ſhould be publiquely beheaded.

Sixtus the fourth managed many wars,and was the author of the *Pactian* league,wherein *Iulian de Medices* and many other gentlemen miſerably miſcaried.

Innocent the third perſecuted *Cæſar Philip*.And is reported to haue boaſted: *That either the Pope ſhould take the Diadem from* Philip, *or* Philip *the Apoſtolike Miter from* Innocent.

Paul

Paul the third was prepared for great Innouations to be practiſed againſt the ſaints of God. For he raiſed the German warre. Like vnto him was *Alexander* the ſixt, whome the Papiſts affirme to bee *moſt cruell*. Of whom they vulgarly repeated theſe verſes.

If after death Borgia *did ſpue vp blood,*
Wonder t'is none: For his cold ſtomack could
Not well diſgeſt ſo great an ingorg'd flood.

Onuphrius writeth, that euen a light word was with him a ſufficient colour to put any man to death.

Vpon what termes the tumults of *France* were firſt raiſed, the league inſtituted, the maſſacre contriued, and the warres continued, the cloſets of *Pius* the fift, and *Gregory* the thirteenth, can beſt teſtifie.

9. *Traitors and mouers of Seditions.*

Alexander the third, manifeſtly ingaged himſelfe in a plot of treaſon againſt *Fredericke*. For proofe whereof, *Frederick* ſummoned a Dyet at *Norimberge*, aſſembled the Princes of the Empire, and before them cauſed the Popes traiterous letter, directed to the Soldan, to be opened, with the meanes of his deliuery.

Gregory the ſecond procured all *Spaine*, *AEmylia*, *Liguria*, *Italy* & other prouinces to reuolt from the Empire: Antichriſtian-like forbidding the people to pay thoſe tributs, which Chriſt himſelfe had formerly commanded.

Sixtus the fourth by entertainement of murdring raſcals hauiug ſlaine *Iulius* of *Medices*, was the occaſion of great tumults in *Florence*.

Gregory the ſeuenth by plotting of infinit practiſes, ſtudied to take away the life of *Henry* the fourth, ſo far

forth that hee would haue murdred him in S. *Maries* Church, being at his praiers. He ſoundly buffeted *Alexander* the ſecond Emperour of the Eaſt, and barbarouſly ſlew *Cincius. Againſt him* (ſaith Bembo) *crieth the Bloud of the Church, poured out by his miſerable trecheries.*

Paſchal the eleuenth, ſpent the whole courſe of his life in warre and commotions.

Gregory the ninth, by his Legats publiquely commanded the Princes of *Germany* to depoſe *Fredericke*. Guilty of the ſame treaſon were *Iulius* the ſecond. *Hadrian* the fourth, and *Gregory* the third.

Gregory the thirteenth, the ſucceſſor of *Pius Quintus* in impiety and tyrannie was the Author, approuer and commender of the *Pariſien* maſſacre: then the which the ſunne neuer beheld a more Satanical ſtratagem, whence roſe the prouerb; *Nuptiæ Gallicæ.*

By the conniuance of *Sixtus* the fifth, *Henry* the third, was ſtabbed to death by a trayterous Monke, and by him the ſaid Murder was exceeding well allowed.

10. *Parricids and impoyſoners.*

PAul the 3. impoyſoned his mother and Niece, that the whole inheritance of the *Farneſian family*, might accrue vnto himſelfe. His other ſiſter alſo, whō he carnally knew, vpō fancying of others, he ſlew by poiſon.

Alexander the ſixth, by poiſon made away *Gemen* the brother and competitor of *Baiazet*, for the hire of 200. thouſand crownes. And by the like medicine he purged away the life of many Senators & Cardinals. But preparing the like ſauce at a ſupper for ſome other, by miſtaking of the Bottle, himſelfe drunk off the prepared cup, and died.

Inno-

Innocent the fourth, being corrupted by rewards, offered a bole of the like liquor to the Emperour *Conrade*. This the ſaid Emperour verified by his publique letters.

Gregory the ſeuenth, by the miniſterie of his companion *Brazatus*, ſlew *Nicholas* the eleuenth with poiſon. And againe, ſome *Authors* affirme, that by the ſeruice of this wicked villaine, he impoiſoned ſix or eight Cardinals, obſtacles in his preferment to the Papacie.

Paul the third, did his beſt, not onely to raiſe the Chriſtian Princes, againſt *Henry* the eight king of *England*, but alſo plotted againſt him ſome practiſes of conſpiracie.

Gregory the thirteenth, loaded with his Indulgences, *Parry*, and others, to haue laid violent hands vpon Queene *Elizabeth*.

II. *Whoremongers.*

Iohn the eleuenth. This man, *Theodora* (with the more ſtate and pomp to inioy her fractique pleaſure) made firſt Biſhop of *Bononia*, ſecondly, Archbiſhop of *Rauenna*, and thirdly, Pope of *Rome*.

Chriſtopher the firſt, who vpon the depoſition of *Leo*, had by the aſſiſtance of his female acquaintance, inuaded the Papacie, was againe himſelfe, by one *Sergius* the Amorite of a gallant whore, named *Marozia*, depoſed and ſhamefully diſgraced.

Iohn the thirteenth, who liued player-like, not Pope-like, was addicted to all kinde of voluptuous pleaſure.

Gregory the ſeuenth, had ſecret commerce with the Counteſſe *Matilda*.

Clement the fifth, was a publique fornicator, and kept for his Leman the Counteſſe of *Perigord*, a moſt beautifull Lady, and the daughter of the Earle of *Foix*.

12. *Adulterers.*

SErgius the third begat *Iohn* the twelfth, vpon that moſt impudent whore *Marozia*: and in his Papacie committed infinite abominations amongſt light women, as writeth *Luitprandus Ticinenſis* in his third book and 12. chapter *de Imperatorum geſtis*.

Lando the firſt: This man in faſhion of an annointed Batchelor, according to the cuſtome of thoſe daies, conſumed the greateſt part of his life amongſt women; and was himſelfe at laſt conſumed, when he had reigned ſeuen moneths.

Iohn the eleuenth. *Theodora*, a famous whore and Lady of *Rome*, was ſo vehemently in loue with this *Iohn* (the baſtard of *Lando*, at his comming to *Rome*) that ſhee not onely deſired, but inforced him to keepe her company. And the freer to inioy his company, ſhe cauſed him to tranſlate the Biſhops ſea from *Rome* to *Rauenna*, as writeth *Ticinenſis* in his ſecond booke. *Cap.* 13.

Iohn the twelfth, the baſtard of that famous whore *Marozia*, ſpent the time of his whole Papacie, in moſt beſtial ſenſuality, of him thus writeth *Theodorick Niemenſis*. Being mounted into the Papacie, he was ſomtime preſent at the huntings of wilde beaſts: the reſt of his time hee ſpent wantonly and pleaſantly, and kept company with ſuſpitious women.

Iohn the thirteenth. None would ſerue his turne but

but virgins,& votareſſes. The *Lateran Pallace* he made his ſtewes. He defiled *Stephana* his fathers concubine, the widdow *Rayner*; another widdow *Hanna*; and his owne Niece.

Alexander the ſixth, was a moſt luxurious tyrant: No penne is able to regiſter the rare, beaſtly and obſcene qualities of this moſt impious Knaue. And ſuch were *Iohn* the 14. 15. 21. 24. *Benedict* the ſixt and ninth. *Stephan* the eighth.

13. *Inceſtuous perſons.*

PAul the third: He, to be made Cardinal & Biſhop of *Oſtia*, gaue vnto *Alexander* the ſixth, his ſiſter *Iulia Farneſe*, to be deflowred. Another of his ſiſters, whom hee kept for his owne ſtore, for playing falſe with others, he poyſoned. *Nicholas Quercæus* taking him and his wife *Laura Farneſe* (though his Niece) together in company, gaue him ſuch a ſtab with his dagger, that the ſcar remained with him to his dying day. Another of his Nieces (a delicat wench, no leſſe admired for her mayden-like modeſty, then her choiſe beauty) this Goat-like olde Knaue ſolicited to inceſt & vnnaturall whoredome. And to inioy his owne daughter *Conſtantia*, with more liberty, whom he had often heretofore knowne, he impoyſoned her husband *Boſius Sfortia*.

Alexander the ſixth, was more familiar with his impudent daughter *Lucretia*, then ſtoode with his honeſtie.

Iohn the thirteenth, often times defiled *Stephana* his fathers concubine. Such an other was *Benedict* the 3.

14. *Sodo-*

14. *Sodomits.*

IVLIVS the ſecond. This man, as we read in a certaine Commentary of the Maſters of *Paris*, abuſed himſelfe with two young gentlemen (beſides others) whom *Anne* Queene of *France* had ſent vnto *Robert* Cardinall of *Nantes*, to be brought vp and inſtructed.

Iulius the third. Being Legat of *Bononia*, he vſed one *Innocent*, his ancient Minion ouer familiarly. Being Biſhop, againſt the mind of the Colledge, he admitteth him his houſhold ſeruant, and createth him one of the Cardinals. The report went at *Rome*, and diſperſed by libells, that *Ioue* kept *Ganimed*, but an ill fauoured one. At what time his Holineſſe preſented this his darling to the Colledge, and euery man denied his conſent: for that his preſented had neither vertue nor good manners to aduance him: It is reported that he ſhould ſay: *What more ſaw you in me, I beſeech you, when you preferred me to this Papacie? Wherefore ſithence we are all but fortunes tennis-balls, and by her good fauour you haue aſſiſted me: ſo in like maner be you fauourable to this my boy, and I will create him a Cardinall.* But after that ſome writers had brandiſhed this Catife for his blaſphemies and villanies, he procured a fellow as wicked as himſelfe, viz. *Ierome Mutius*, to defend his actions, and thereto he put his approbation. *Virgerius* writeth, that he abſtained not from the Cardinalls themſelues. In the time of this incarnate diuill liued, and iſſued from his priuate cloſet, that Apoſtaticall Legat *Iohannes à Caſa*, Archbiſhop of *Beneuent*, who in Italian rithmes writ a Poeme in commendation of the ſinne

of

of Sodomy; and Intitled it, *Opus diuinum:* affirming that he tooke great delight therein, and neuer knew any other venery.

Leo the tenth made alwaies very much of his carkaſſe, and gaue his mind to all variety of pleaſure, but eſpecially to the loue of boies.

Sixtus the fourth built a famous brothell houſe at *Rome*, and dedicated it to both Sexes. *Weſſell* of groning reporteth in his treatiſe of Popiſh Indulgences, that at the requeſtes of *Peter Ruerius* (his Fatherhoods Catanut) as alſo at the inſtance of *S. Sixtus* Cardinall and Patriarch of Conſtantinople, and *Ierome* his brother; his Holineſſe graunted his faculty to all the houſhold ſeruants of the Cardinall of *S. Luce*, chiefe huntſman vnto *Paul* the eleuenth (a fearefull thing to be ſpoken) in the hot months of *Iune*, *Iulie*, and *Auguſt*, to vſe the maſculine ſinne; ſigning the Bull with this clauſe: *Fiat quod petitur.*

Petrus Mendoza called Cardinall *Valentinian*, not contented with a troope of euill women, nor ſatisfied with the Queene her ſelfe; deſired and oft obtained of *Alexander* the ſixt to vſe in holy ſingle-life, as his beſt beloued ſpouſe, his baſtard Sonne the Marqueſſe of *Zaneth.*

Iohn the four and twentith was accuſed in the Counſell of *Conſtance*, to haue been a Sodomit, an adulterer, and a whoremonger.

Clemeut the ſeuenth. Of him it is recorded in a certaine Commentary vppon the Articles of the Maſters of *Paris*, that hee was, a baſtard, a poyſoner, a Man-ſlayer, a Pandar, a Symonianiſt, a Sodomit, a Periurer, a deflowrer, a Rauiſher, a Geomancer, a

Church-robber, and a plotter of all villanies. Such like were *Benedict* the third, *Iohn* the thirteenth, fourteenth and *Paul* the third.

Hence complaineth *Luit prandus*, that the Lateran pallace became by time and ſufferance to be a receptacle of vncleane perſons.

15. *The Fauorites of Whores.*

VICTOR the third obtained the Papacy, neither by the choice of the Cardinals, nor by the ſuffrages of the people, but was thereunto hoyſted by his Miſtriſſe *Matilda* with the aſſiſtance of the Normans.

Vrban the ſecond, and *Victor*, by the ſame party and like meanes, obtained the like preferment.

Iohn the eleuenth, by the wealth of *Theodora* an impudent gameſter, ran the ſame fortune.

Paul the third had a roll of forty fiue thouſand whores, of whom he exacted a monthly tribut. And no wonder, for if fame deceiue not, I haue heard it reported by men of good experience, that *Rome* is a City conſiſting of about fiue thouſand ſoules, whereof a third part were accounted to bee light weomen and Church-men.

Sextus the fourth was very bountifull towards their maintenance, and had to ſpare for his friends and ſeruants. It ſhould ſeeme hee augmented their numbers; for their hyer prooued very aduantagious to his Exchequer, euery whore being rated to pay weekly to his Holineſſe behoofe, a peece of their Coine, termed a *Iulius*. The yeerely Entrado whereof many

times

times amounteth to the yeerly value of foure hundred thousand dukats. And the Officers of the Church doe as duely make their accounts for this Entrado, as for any other of the Churches reuenues.

Lucius the third ratified the sacring of whoore-mongers.

Iohn the thirteenth being deposed for his enormious villanies, the weomen of his old acquaintance by promising the Romane nobility their rewards out of the Churches treasure, inuited them to Armes, and wrought his restitution.

Iohn the eight. Shee was at first called *Gilberta*; but counterfaiting the virill Sex, and the habit of a young man, went first to *Athens* with a Monke her sweete heart. Where after her great proficiency in the Arts, and the death of her friend, Shee returned alone to Rome, but alwayes in her late disguise. Where in all disputations, behauing her selfe for eloquence and readinesse of acute answers with admiration, shee so gayned the good esteemes of all her Auditorie, that *Leo* beeing dead, shee was chosen Pope, and sate in *Peters* Chayre two yeeres and sixe moneths.

During her Popedome she was gotten with child by a familiar friend, her Chapleine, and in a solemne Procession, betweene the Colosse and Saint *Clements* Church shee fell in trauaile, and in the middest of the City, in the streetes, and before all the people, she brought foorth a Sonne, and through paine died in the place. Certainlie it can not bee doubted, but that God suffered this whore to bee Pope, to represent in plaine termes that Babylonian creature,

ſpoken of in the 17. of the *Apocalips*, to the end that of her ſelfe, and her inchantments, the Elect might beware.

16. *Bawdes.*

PAul the third, ſurrendred his ſiſter *Iulia Ferneſe* vnto *Alexander* the ſixth, to be defloured.

Sixtus the fourth, by the teſtimony of *Agrippa*, amongſt the moderne Pandors, was the moſt eminent; As the man who excelled all other builders in the edifying of that moſt ſtately brothel-houſe, which he dedicated to both ſexes.

17. *Baſtards.*

MArtin the eleuenth, by a common woman, was the ſonne of a Negromantique Prieſt.

So was *Iohn* the eleuenth, begotten by Pope *Lando.*

Item, *Iohn* the twelfth, begotten by *Sergius* the third vpon *Marozia.*

Item, *Iohn* the fourteenth, then ſonne of *Iohn* the twelfth.

Item, *Iohn* the ſixteenth, the ſonne of *Leo* a Prieſt.

Item, *Benedict* the eighth, the ſonne of Biſhop *Gregorie.*

Item, *Iohn* the ſeuenteenth, another ſonne of the ſame *Gregory.*

Item, *Siluester* the third, the ſonne of the Arch-prieſt *Lawrance.*

Item, *Adrian* the fourth, the ſonne of Monk *Robert.*

Item, *Eugenius* the fourth, the ſonne of *Gregory* the twelfth, Pope.

Item, *Clement* the ſeuenth, the ſon of *Leo* the tenth.

Item,

Item, *Gregory* the ninth, the ſonne of *Innocent* the third.

Item, *Adrian* the fifth, the ſon of *Innocent* the fourth.

Item, *Gregory* the eleuenth, the ſonne of *Clement* the ſixth.

18. *Drunkards.*

LEo the tenth, and *Nicholas* the fifth were famous for the loue of their liquor.

19. *Couetous perſons.*

THeodore of *Niem*, did long agoe delineat the Auarice of the Romane Biſhops. For hee compared the Popes Exchequer to the Ocean, whereunto all Riuers paid tribute, and yet was it neuer ſatisfied.

Hiſtories do affirme, that at one gleaning the Popes had out of *France* ninety hundred thouſand crownes. Whereupon *Lewes* the ninth complained, that his Kingdome was miſerably exhauſted by theſe Harpies.

The wealthy Kingdome of *England* to be miſerably impoueriſhed, partly by tithes, partly by procurations of the Apoſtolique Legats, partly by donatiues, and partly by the ſale of Benefices, *Mathew Paris* in his time did much complaine. In thoſe daies, ſayeth hee, Pope *Gregory* either ſo permitting or procuring; the inſatiable auarice of the Romane Clergy, grew to be ſo feruent, that without any ſparke of modeſty (confounding all law and equity, as a common and braſen-faced-Harlot) ſet all to ſale to all ſorts of perſons, and reputed Vſury as a trifle, and Simony as a matter of no inconuenience.

Germany was pillaged after the ſame faſhion.

By warre and cunning, the Pope wreſted from the Emperour his lawfull Patrimonies, ſome after ſome, throughout *Italy*.

By harlots they make alſo rich purchaſes; they put out their mony to Intereſt, and account no gaine, baſe or vnlawfull

20. *Church-robbers.*

BOniface the ſeuenth, when he ſaw that it was no longer ſafe for him to reſide at *Rome*, priuily and felonioufly he purloyned certaine rich treſurers out of the Church of *Saint Peter*, and fled to *Conſtantinople*.

Clement the ſeuenth, was accuſed for periurie, ſacriledge, and impoyſoning, &c.

21. *Simonianiſts.*

FRom *Gregory* the ninth, *Cæſar* obtained his abſolution for the price of one hundred thouſand ounces of gold.

Benedict the ninth, being ſtrucken with feare; for one thouſand and fiue hundred pounds, ſolde the Papacie to his Chapman *Iohn Gratian*, afterward called *Gregory* the ſixth. Hereupon *Iohn* the Monk complained, that *Rome* was founded by theeues, and ſo continued vntill this day, to liue by ſpoiles. And *Alan Chartierius*, ſaith, *you haue made the diuine ſanctuary a banke of Exchange.*

Alike in conſcience were *Leo* the tenth. *Innocent* the eighth, *Siluester* the third, *Gregory* the ſixth, *Gregorie*

rie the twelfth, *Iohn* the eighteenth, &c. So that *Bernhard* alſo complained, *That the Holy offices of the Church were become meerely queſtuarie.*

22. *Ambitious perſons.*

IOhn the foure and twentieth, by ambition onely affected the Papacie. For by the teſtimony of *Stella*, when he liued at *Bononia*, he carried himſelfe more like a Lord then a Legat; He was gouernour of a great Armie, and vnto him the fathers were glad to reſort to elect a new Pope; he gaue out many vnder hand-threats, that vnleſſe they would preſent one to the Papacie, whō without exception, himſelfe ſhould very well like of, he ſhould not preuaile. Whereupon, many were nominated, of whom he meant neuer to approue one. Whereupon, the Fathers beſeeched him to name the man whom he beſt fancied. *Then giue me* Peters *cloake* (quoth he) *and I will beſtow it on him that ſhall be Pope.* Which being done, he caſt the cloake vpon his owne ſhoulders, ſaying, *Behold your Pope.* Which ſtratagem, though it diſpleaſed the Fathers, yet they thought it fitter to be ſilent, then to aggrauate diſpleaſure.

Iohn the three & twentith, was a man moſt ambitious, writing vnto the Greekes, *That hee onely was head of the Church, and Chriſt his Vicar*. Vnto whom the Grecians re-anſwered in as many words *We conſtantly acknowledge thy high authority ouer thy ſubiects: thy high pride we can not indure; thy auarice wee are not able to ſatisfie. The diuell be with thee; the Lord is with vs.*

So *Iohn* the two and twenteth, after a long vacation, being made Cardinall by the Councel of *Naples*; being

ing intrusted with the election, elected himselfe: which by the Canons he could not doe.

So *Boniface* the third that ambitious beast, in the midst of a tumultuous number, (yet many gainesaying it) was heaued into the Papacy; confirmed, worshipped, and saluted Lord and Prince of all Bishops by that adulterous Emperor, parricide and tyrant, *Phocas*.

Afterward by ardent importunity, or rather by his immoderate bribery, he obtained, that *Rome* should be called the *Head* of all the christian Churches, vppon these idle reasons forsooth: That the Empire first took his origen from *Rome*, and so *Peter* gaue vnto his successors of *Rome* the Keies, &c. Read the history of *Phocas* and this *Boniface*, to be further satisfied of their mutuall knaueries.

One of the Popes best benefactors.

Let *Paschal* the eleuenth ranke with these fellowes. For when *William* procurator and Clarke to king *Henry*, speaking in his masters right, amongst other reasons constantly affirmed: *That the King had rather loose his kingdome, then the Innestiture of Prelats*: the Pope made this proud reply. *If as thou saiest, thy master will not suffer the Ecclesiasticall presentations to bee alienated from him, for the losse of his kingdome; then take thou notice precisely, I speake it before God, that neither I without the price of his head will suffer him to inioy them quietly.*

A good Pope, that would not in those daies touch an Emperor before he had become a priuate person.

Clement the sixt answered the Embassadors of *Lewes* the Emperor as arrogantly: *That he would neuer pardon his Maiesty, before he had resigned his Imperiall right, sequestred himselfe, his children, and all his goods into his custody, and promised neuer to retake them but by the Bishops grace and good liking.*

A Popish miracle.

So great was the spirit of *Boniface* the eight, that almost

moſt he diſdained all men. For ſuch was his ambition, that he ſuborned certaine companions in lieu of Angels with a ſoft voice by night, to ſound in the chamber of Pope *Celeſtine*, that he ſhould voluntarily reſigne the Popedome, if hee meant to ſaue his life. Which the ſimple man performed accordingly. But *Boniface* contrary to Law and equitie, ſtepping into the Popedome, layd violent hands vpon *Celeſtine* trauelling out of *Rome*, to lead his life in ſome ſolitary manſion, and caſt him into perpetuall priſon.

The ſame *Boniface* inſtituted the *Iubile*, and celebrated it, in the yeere of our Lord 1300. promiſing to all people that would viſit the City, full remiſſion of their ſinnes. He reiected an Embaſſie ſent from the Emperor *Albert*. Vpon the firſt day of the ſolemnity, he appeared in his Pontificalibus, and beſtowed his benedictions vpon the people. The next day he came foorth accoutred like an Emperor, and commanded a naked ſword to be borne before him, with this acclamation: *Behold here two ſwords. This is the right I haue to kingdomes and Empire; they are all in my diſpoſition. The kings of the earth, vnleſſe they will receiue their kingdome from this holy Se1, are to be accurſed and depoſed.* Finally hee gloried in his pride, that he was *the porter of Heauen, and ought to be adiudged by no man.*

Adrian the fourth did grieuouſly chide *Fredericke* the Emperor for holding his left ſtirrope, as he came from horſe. *vt ſupra. fo.*

Alexander the third in more baſe manner vſed an other Emperor as before. *fo.*

Stephen the ſecond depoſed *Childerick*, and preferred

Pipin to his place. He ſhaued *Childericks* crowne, and thruſt him into a monaſtery. *Pipin* lay agroofe vpon the earth, kiſſed the Popes toe, held his horſe by the bridle, performed the office of a footman, *and gaue him his oath of perpetuall fidelity.*

Note what perſons the Pope bindeth to his ſeruice.

Damaſus the ſecond. This man was Chancellour to his predeceſſor; but his ambition not able to ſtay the death of his maſter, it is reported, that he gaue him a dram to diſpatch him.

Note.

Conſtantine the firſt. This man was the firſt that put his foot to be kiſſed by an Emperor.

Benedict the third followed the preſident, and ſuffered himſelfe to be worſhipped as a moſt holy Father, or rather like a terrene Idoll.

Iohn the ſeuen and twentith did the like to *Creſcentius* the Roman Conſul.

Martin the fift to *Sigiſmund Cæſar.*

Leo the fourth gaue his foot to all commers, and againſt the Canons of the *Aquiſgran* Councel, firſt aduanced a Papall croſſe, and adorned it with pretious ſtones, commanding it to be caried before him. Of the like ſtampe were *Boniface* the firſt, *Symmachus*, *Boniface* the ſecond, *Siluerius*, *Martin* the ſecond, *Formoſus* the firſt, *Theodorus* the ſecond, *Benedict* the fourth, *Sergius* the third, *Iohn* the tenth, *Gregory* the ſixt, &c.

23. *Monſters.*

BEnedict the ninth. Hiſtoriographers doe write that this *Benedict* was ſeene neere a certaine Mill by an Hermit in a moſt horrible ſhape. His body was like a Beare,

Beare, adioyned thereto the head and taile of an Asse. And being asked by him, how he came to be thus metamorphosed: It is reported, that he answered: *In this shape doe I wander, for that in my Popedome I liued without reason, without God, and without limitation.*

Nicholas the third begat a sonne on his Concubin, who had hayre and clawes like vnto a Beare. *Vide Iohannem Nouiomagum.*

24. *Illiterate persons.*

B*Enedict* the eleuenth was a meere Laique. And so were *Benedict* the ninth, *Sergius* the third, *Eugenius* the fourth, *Iohn* the ninth, *Iohn* the one and twentith, &c.

OF THE FALL AND DEATH OF *certaine Romane Bishops.*

ADrian the third flying from *Rome*, came vnto *Venice* in the Habit of his Cooke: where he lurked in a certaine monastery, and was made the Gardiner of the garden thereof.

Iohn the fiue and twentith trauelling towards *Constance* fell headlong from his litter: a presage of his future deposition. For many faults beeing obiected against him in the Councell, he began to flie: but being taken and preuented; he was cast into prison, and there remained for three yeeres.

Silxerius Campanus was baniſhed into *Pontus* by *Theodora* the wife of the Emperor *Iuſtinian*. The ſame *Theodora* her ſelfe impleaded *Vigilius* for not perfourming his word: arreſted him to *Conſtantinople*; there contumelioufly diſgraced him, whipped him, caſt an halter about his neck; cauſed him to be haled through all the ſtreets of the City, and finally baniſhed him.

Conſtantinus the ſecond, was eiected by a Councel: and beeing depriued aſwell of his eies as of his Popedome, he was caſt into a monaſtery, and after into a perpetuall priſon.

Benedict the fift was depriued of his papall dignity, and ſent into baniſhment.

Stephen the eight was ſo forely wounded in a popular tumult, that for the deformity of his wound, hee was neuer after willing to ſhew himſelfe in publique.

Innocent the fourth died miſerably. *Robert of Lincoln* reproued his vile behauiour, his auarice, his pride, and his tyranny, and that as well by word of mouth, as by writing. For which the Pope citeth him to *Rome*, and iniuriouſly condemneth him. From him *Robert* appealeth vnto Chriſt as his Iudge. Vpon the death of *Lincolne* (as writeth *Ceſtrienſis lib.* 7.) a voice is heard in the Court of *Rome*, crying; *Miſerable man, make ready to come to the tribunall of God.* Vpon the day following the Pope is found dead in his bed, and vpon his body appeared a blewiſh blow, as if he had been ſtrucken with a cudgell.

Silueſter the ſecond beeing at Maſſe was attached with a ſuddain feuer; and by the noiſe of ſpirits (witneſſe

neſſe *Peter Præmonſtratenſis*) he perceiued that his end drew nigh, to pay the diuell his due vpon compoſition. He confeſſed his errors, and (as ſaith *Benno*) preuented a miſerable and fearefull deſtruction. Yet in the anguiſh of death, he deſired that his hands, his tongue, and his priuities, wherewith euen in his ſingle life, he had blaſphemed God, by ſacrificing to diuels, might be cut off.

If it were a true confeſſion, no doubt.

Nicholas the third in midſt of his greateſt imaginations, was taken with an apoplexy, and without one word ſpeaking breathed his laſt.

Paul the ſecond hauing merrily ſupped, was alſo taken with the apoplexy, and departed, without ſight of any man.

Paſchal the ſecond was taken by the Emperour, and thruſt into priſon.

Gelaſius the eleuenth. One *Cinthius* a powerfull patrician of the City made an aſſault vpon him, tooke him by the throat, caſt him to the earth, ſpurnd him with his feet, and caſt him into priſon.

Boniface the eight, Grown deſperate with the ouerwaight of fury, gaue vp his vnhappy ghoſt loden with an infinit heape of miſchieuous actions. This is that Pope, of whom it is recorded, *That he entred as a wolfe, liued as a Lyon, and dyed as a Dog.*

Gregory the ſixt was taken priſoner, and ſent into baniſhment.

Gregory the ſeuenth for his innumerable wickednesſes was depoſed by the Emperor *Henry*, and in baniſhment ended his daies.

Eugenius the fourth priuily flying in a monaſti-

call coole, together with his friend *Arſenius*, entred a fiſher-boat. Vpon report whereof, his enemies followed to ſeeke him with ſtones and ſhot.

Clement the ſeuenth, for his conſpiring with the *French King* againſt the Emperour, was made priſoner by *Charles* his Captaines, and wonderfully derided by the *Germane* ſouldiers.

Iohn the eleuenth, was taken by the ſouldiers of *Guido*, committed to priſon, & ſtifled with a ſirplice thruſt into his mouth.

Boniface the eleuenth died ſuddenly.

Iohn the eighth, not that teeming woman, but a man, died together with his *Creſcentius*, hauing his eies firſt put out, and his whole body mangled.

Benedict the eleuenth, was poiſoned at an Abbeſſes banquet with a diſh of figges.

Benedict the ſixth, no doubt for ſuch like malapert practiſes, as in theſe dayes Popes play with mightie Princes, was taken by one *Cinthius*, a powerfull Roman Citizen, thruſt into the Mole of *Hadrian*, now *Saint Angelo*, the priſon of the baſeſt offendours, and there miſerably ſtrangled.

Hadrian the fourth: Into his mouth flew a flie, which could not be taken out, nor thruſt downe, by any Art of the Phyſitian: ſo that it ſtopped his breath, and choked him.

Lucius the ſecond, with an armed band, aſſaulted the Citizens in the Capitol, of purpoſe vtterly to deſtroy the whole Senate. The newes runneth through the City: the people fly to Armes: and a ſtrong fight is managed. *Lucius* ingaging himſelfe in the hotteſt of his

his armed troupes, is ſo mauled with ſtones and ſhot, that a little while after he ſurrendred his life.

Iohn the two and twentith. At the inſtant wherein he promiſed vnto himſelfe a long continuance of his life, was ſuddenly taken away, and was alone found buried amongſt timber and rubbiſh, by the fall of a chamber.

Clement the ſixt was ſuddenly taken with an Apoſtume, and died.

Leo the tenth ſuddenly died with an aſtoniſhing diſeaſe.

Leo the third was ſo odious vnto the people, that in a certaine Proceſſion being caſt from his horſe; they diſpoyled him of his pontificall ornaments; buffeted him well fauouredly, and committed him to priſon. And as ſome report, they depriued him both of his eies and his tongue.

Chriſtopher the firſt being depoſed from the Papacy, was conſtrained to lead a monaſticall life. Not long after he was taken from the ſaid monaſtery by *Sergius* his ſucceſſor, and committed to a moſt ſeuere priſon, and there ended his daies in great miſery.

¶ *Theſe vnder written were poiſoned.*

IOHN the ſixteenth, nineteenth, & twentith. *Clement* the ſecond. *Damaſus* the ſecond. *Leo* the ninth. *Victorinus* the ſecond. *Nicholas* the ſecond. *Alexander* the ſecond. *Victorinus* the third. *Gregory* the eight. *Celeſtine* the fourth. *Vrban* the ſixt. *Alexander* the fift. *Clement* the ſeuenth.

Thus

Thus much for their manners: and now to ſtop the mouthes of thoſe who cry out; what is this to Religion? Behold here for a concluſion, not the fruits, but the *very points, ſome few for a taſte of theſe their irreligious documents.*

BLASPHEMIES OF THE CANONISTES.

THE Biſhop of *Rome* is God. *Diſt. 96. ca. Satis euidenter.*

2. The Pope is not man. *Lib. 1. Sexti de electione. tit. 6. ca. Fundamenta in Gloſſatore.*

3. The Pope is neither God, nor man. *In prologo clementinarum in gloſſatore.*

4. It is lawfull for no man to imagine or practiſe to tranſgreſſe the precepts of the Apoſtolicall Sea. *Diſt. 20. ca. Nulli. Item diſt. 12. & 22.*

5. An Heretique is hee who is not obedient to the Popes decrees. *ibid. in gloſſ.*

6. He is guilty of Sacriledge, that belieth the Pope: For he ſupplieth the place of the liuing God on earth. *De pœnit. diſt. 1. ca. libenter ignoſco.*

7. The Pope is the vniuerſall Biſhop through al parts of the earth. *Lib. 5. Sexti. ca. fœlicis. in gloſſ.*

8. The Pope is Lord of all principalities vpon earth. *Li. 3. Sexti. tit. 16. cap. Periculoſo.*

9. Let no man dare to ſay vnto the Pope, Lord why doſt

doſt thou doe thus, or thus ? *In extrau. tom.* 22. *tit.* 5. *ca. ad Apoſtolatus in gloſſ.* 2. *li.* 1. *Decretal. tit.* 7. *ca.* 5. *vide gloſſ.*

10. The Pope by vertue of theſe words, *Thou art Peter:* or, *feede my ſheepe*, obtaineth primacy. *In præmio Sexti in gloſſ.*

11. No mortall man may ſit in iudgement vpon the Pope. *Cauſ.* 9. *quæſt.* 3. *c. nemo. Item aliorum. & diſt.* 40. *ca. ſi Papa. Cauſ.* 12. *quæſt.* 2. *ca. quiſquis. in gl. diſt.* 40. *ca. non nos. in gloſſ.*

12. It is lawfull for no creature to call into queſtion the iudgement of the Apoſtolique Sea, or to delay the ſentence thereof. *Cauſ.* 17. *quæſt.* 4. *c. nemini.*

13. The Pope may diſpence againſt the Apoſtles. *diſt.* 34. *collector in gloſſ. diſt.* 82. *ca. presbiter. in gloſſ. cauſ.* 15. *quæſt.* 6. *ca. Authoritatem. in gloſſ.*

14. The Pope hath celeſtiall arbitrement. *Li.* 1. *decr. Greg. tit.* 1. *ca.* 5.

15. The Pope may change the Nature of things. *ibid.*

16. The Pope of nothing can make ſomething. *ibid.*

17. The Popes will is a Law. *ibid.*

18. The Pope may diſpenſe aboue the law. *ibid.*

19. The Pope may cauſe an vniuſt decree to be receiued for iuſt. *ibid.*

20. The Pope hath fulneſſe of power. *ibid.*

21. As is the difference betweene the Sunne and the Moone: ſuch is the difference between the Pope and a King. *Li.* 1. *decre. Greg. tit.* 33. *ſolitæ.*

22. Perſons vniuſtlie condemned and oppreſſed ought to ſeeke redreſſe and amends from the Church of Rome. *Cauſ.* 2. *quæſt.* 6. *c. ideo.*

Laſt of all,
By theſe Mens Liues, Manners, *and* Doctrine *new,*
Pen'd by the trauaile of my Pen; O you,
Who read the leazings of this falſe-mouth'd crue,
Learne theſe their Liues, Words, Maners *to eſchue.*

CONTRADICTIONS MORE REAſonable, then Canoniſticall.

A Learned and noble preacher (if any ſuch be amongſt the Ieſuits) being demaunded his iudgement concerning the opinion of *Bozius* (a more peremptory Champian for the Canoniſts then any of his fellowes) *Eum vocabat Papalem paraſitum, viz.* termed him a Papall paraſite.

B. *De poteſt. papæ. ſo.* 6.

Gaguin a learned and religious hiſtoriographer, in his time, thus taxeth this their irregular vſurpation: *Such is* (ſaith he) *at this day their haughtineſſe and Lordſhip, that hauing ſmall reſpect vnto Princes, they boaſt that all things are lawfull vnto themſelues ſoly.* Neither in my Age did any of them aſcend the Papacy, but forthwith hee enriched his nephewes with infinit wealth, and honours.

Li. 10. *Hiſt. Fr. in vita Caroli vij.*

S. Bernard long before *Gaguin*: *Doth not now ambition more then deuotion, poſſeſſe the Apoſtolicall ſucceſſion?*

Lib. 3. *de Conſid. ad Eug.*

Hereupon ſaid *Platina*: In this maner dyed that *Boniface*, who ſtudied more to terrifie, then to teache Kings, Princes, and nations. Who for his pleaſure made it a matter of paſtime, to giue and retake kingdomes, to interdict Nations, and abſolue them afterwards. *Gaguin* againe; Such was the end of *Boniface*,

In vita Bonifacij.

face, the ſcorner of all men: who hauing no remembrance of his Maſter Chriſt, did his vtmoſt, according to his priuate fancy, to take and to giue kingdomes. When meane time, he was not ignorant, that he was *his* vicegerent vpon earth, whoſe kingdome was not of this world, nether compounded of earthly, but of heauenly perquiſits, &c. *Li.7.hiſt.in vita Philippi Pulchri.*

Pius the fift ſaid vnto *Martin Aſpibeneta*; That the Lawyers (meaning the Canoniſts) accuſtomed to attribute *plus ſatis poteſtatis*, more then reaſonable ſupereminency to the Papacy. *Nauar.in Com. Can.Non liceat Papæ.12.q.2.*

No wonder then, if *I.Gerſ.* termed them *puſillos*, that is, weake and ſimple Chriſtians, who being deceiued (his own words) by vnlearned Gloſſors, *doe eſteeme the Pope onely to bee God, hauing all power in heauen and in earth.* Certainly, *tales adulatores*, ſuch Paraſites haue corrupted the iudgement and diſpoſitions of many Popes. As concerning whome, *Iohan.de turre-cremata* thus cenſureth. *It is a wonder* (ſaith he) *that the Popes doe treat ſo modeſtly of their Patent of Power, and yet certaine Doctorculi, vpſtart Doctors without any true ground will, to flatter them, euen equalize them to God himſelfe.* *In Cano.Coniunctio.35.q.2.*

In the ſame liſt doth Cardinall *Cuſanus* ranke certaine other Authors; *Who* (ſaith he) *indeauouring more then befitteth, or beſeemeth holy Church, to make famous the Roman Sea (in truth worthy all commendation) ſpare not to ground themſelues vpon Apocriphall writings. Verbum ſapienti.*

FINIS.

A115
24

60808

C 24526

60808

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION